

# Macmillan's History Reader

## Book I

peace in the land ; and Hereward lived to a good age, beloved by all Englishmen as a hero.

## 2.—The Angry Prince

1. William the First had three sons—Robert, William, and Henry.

2. Robert was bold, unruly, and had a very bad temper.

3. William was much disliked, for he was very sly and mean ; but Henry was a quiet boy, very fond of study.

4. One day the three boys were playing together in the castle yard, when William and Henry threw a can of water over Robert.

5. Robert flew into a great passion and drew his sword.

6. This was a serious matter, and the King was angry and scolded Robert severely.

7. The Prince ran away and tried to



gain some part of the country for himself.

8. In those days soldiers used to wear coats of iron, and helmets which



WILLIAM AND HENRY THREW A CAN OF WATER OVER ROBIN.

had flaps which so much covered the face that it was difficult to recognise any one who wore them.

9. In one of the fights which took place Robert and his father met without knowing each other.

10. The young man soon overcame the old soldier, knocked him down, and was going to stab him, when, his helmet slipping off, Robert saw it was his father.

11. Robert knelt down and asked his father to forgive him, but William left the crown to his younger sons, and Robert passed his last years in prison.

### 3.—The Faithful Page

1. Richard the First was so brave that he was generally called the Lion Heart.

2. One of his wars was in the Holy Land, where he won so many battles and did such great deeds that his fame spread all over Europe.

3. After a time he had to return to England, and started on his journey with but few servants.

4. He was taken prisoner by the Duke of Austria, who was a very hard-

hearted man, and who hated Richard because of his success.

5. The vile Duke put Richard in a dark room in a castle built in a large forest so that no one should find out where he was.

6. Richard had a little page who was not with him when he was taken prisoner, and he set out in search of his master.

7. He was a good singer and harper, and as he wandered about Germany he sang some of the songs which his master loved, hoping that if Richard heard him, he would sing also and so let him know where he was.

8. After many weary travels he got to the castle where the King was shut up.

9. He sang the first verse of the King's favourite song and then waited.

10. He was greatly pleased when he heard the second verse being sung by a voice he loved so well.

11. Blondel hastened away and spread

the news, which caused a great outcry all over Europe.

12. Though every one cried shame on



HE SANG THE FIRST VERSE OF THE KING'S FAVOURITE SONG.

the Duke for his treatment of the brave soldier of the Cross, he would not let Richard go without a large ransom.

13. The people in England, after a great deal of trouble, got the money, and he was let go.

14. It was well that Richard travelled fast, for he had hardly gone when the Duke sent soldiers after him to bring him back.

15. But the greedy, disgraced Duke was disappointed ; for his soldiers came back, having reached the sea-shore just in time to see Richard's ship going off to England.

#### 4.—King John and the Abbot of Canterbury—Part I.

1. An ancient story I'll tell you anon,  
Of a notable prince that was called  
King John ;  
And he ruled England with main  
and with might,  
For he did great wrong, and main-  
tain'd little right.
2. And I'll tell you a story, a story so  
merry,  
Concerning the Abbot of Canter-  
bury ;

How for his housekeeping and high  
renown,  
They rode post for him to fair  
London town.

3. A hundred men, the King did hear  
say,  
The Abbot kept in his house every  
day ;  
And fifty gold chains, without any  
doubt,  
In velvet coats waited the Abbot  
about.

4. “ How now, father Abbot, I hear it  
of thee,  
Thou keepest a far better house  
than me ;  
And for thy housekeeping and high  
renown,  
I fear thou work’st treason against  
my crown.

5. “ Yes, yes, father Abbot, thy fault it  
is high,

And now for the same thou needest  
must die ;  
For except thou canst answer me  
questions three,  
Thy head shall be smitten from thy  
bodie.

6. “ And first,” quoth the King, “ when  
I’m in this stead,  
With my crown of gold so fair on  
my head,  
Among all my liege-men so noble of  
birth,  
Thou must tell me to one penny  
what I am worth.

7. “ Secondly, tell me, without any  
doubt,  
How soon I may ride the whole  
world about.  
And at the third question thou must  
not shrink,  
But tell me here truly what I do  
think.”

8. "O these are hard questions for my  
shallow wit,  
Nor I cannot answer your grace  
as yet ;



"I'LL DO MY ENDEAVOUR TO ANSWER YOUR GRACE."

But if you will give me but three  
weeks' space,  
I'll do my endeavour to answer  
your grace."



9. "Now three weeks' space to thee  
 will I give,  
 And that is the longest time thou  
 hast to live ;  
 For if thou dost not answer my  
 questions three,  
 Thy lands and thy livings are forfeit  
 to me."

10. Away rode the Abbot, all sad at  
 the word,  
 And he rode to Cambridge and  
 Oxenford ;  
 But never a doctor there was so  
 wise  
 That could with his learning an  
 answer devise.

11. Then home rode the Abbot of  
 comfort so cold,  
 And he met his shepherd a-going to  
 fold ;  
 "How now, my Lord Abbot, you  
 are welcome home ;



SIR WALTER RALEIGH

*(From the picture at Knole)*

What news do you bring us from  
good King John ? ”

12. “ Sad news, sad news, shepherd, I  
must give,  
That I have but three days more to  
live ;  
For if I do not answer him questions  
three,  
My head will be smitten from my  
bodie.

13. “ The first is to tell him there in  
that stead,  
With his crown of gold so fair on  
his head,  
Among all his liege-men so noble of  
birth,  
To within one penny of what he is  
worth.

14. “ The second, to tell him, without  
any doubt,  
How soon he may-ride the whole  
world about ;

And at the third question I must  
not shrink,  
But tell him there truly what he  
does think."

### 5.—King John and the Abbot of Canterbury—Part II.

1. "Now cheer up, Sir Abbot, did you  
never hear yet  
That a fool he may learn a wise  
man wit?  
Lend me horse, and serving-men,  
and your apparel  
And I'll ride to London to answer  
your quarrel.
2. "Nay, frown not, if it hath been  
told unto me,  
I am like your lordship as ever  
may be ;  
And if you will but lend me your  
gown,  
There is none shall know us in fair  
London'town."

3. "Now horses and serving-men thou  
shalt have,  
With sumptuous array most gallant  
and brave,



"NAY, FROWN NOT."

- With crozier, and mitre, and rochet,  
and cope,  
Fit to appear 'fore our father, the  
Pope."
4. "Now welcome, Sir Abbot," the  
King he did say,  
"'Tis well thou'rt come back to keep  
thy day ;

For and if thou canst answer my  
questions three,  
Thy life and thy living both saved  
shall be.

5. “And first, when thou seest me  
here in this stead,  
With my crown of gold so fair on  
my head,  
Among all my liege-men so noble of  
birth,  
Tell me to one penny what I am  
worth.”

6. “For thirty pence our Saviour was  
sold  
Among the false Jews, as I have  
been told ;  
And twenty-nine is the worth of  
thee,  
For I think thou art one penny  
worsen than He.”

7. The King he laughed, and swore by  
St. Bittél,

“I did not think I had been worth  
so little !

Now secondly, tell me, without any  
doubt,

How soon I may ride this whole  
world about.”

8. “You must rise with the sun, and  
ride with the same,

Until the next morning he riseth  
again ;

And then your grace need not make  
any doubt

But in twenty-four hours you’ll ride  
it about.”

9. The King he laughed, and swore by  
St. Jone,

“I did not think it could be gone  
so soon.

Now from the third question thou  
must not shrink,

But tell me here truly what I do  
think.”

10. Yea, that I shall do, and make your  
    grace merry ;  
    You think I'm the Abbot of Canter-  
        bury ;  
    But I'm his poor shepherd, as plain  
        you may see,  
    That am come to beg pardon for  
        him and for me."
11. The King he laughed, and swore by  
    the mass,  
    "I'll make thee Lord Abbot this  
        day in his place."  
    "Nay, nay, my liege, be not in such  
        speed,  
    For alack, I can neither write nor  
        read."
12. "Four nobles a-week, then, I will  
    give thee,  
    For this merry jest thou hast shown  
        unto me ;  
    And tell the old Abbot, when thou  
        comest home,



Thou hast brought him a pardon  
from good King John."

## 6.—Arthur

1. The story of Arthur is a very sad one.

2. He was the nephew of Richard, and on his death should have been King.

3. But his uncle John, who was a very cruel man, made himself King and shut up Arthur in prison.

4. The keeper of the prison was named Hubert, and got his place by promising to kill Arthur.

5. When the King's order came for Arthur's death, Hubert could not bring himself to murder the innocent boy.

6. He said the boy could do no harm if his eyes were put out, and he got two men who were willing to do the cruel deed.

7. When the men were taken into the room with their irons, Arthur was so

frightened at their wicked faces that he prayed Hubert to do the deed himself, but not let him be touched by the men.



ARTHUR BEGGED VERY HARD.

8. At last Hubert sent the men out and told the poor little boy that his eyes were to be put out by order of the King.

9. Arthur begged very hard, and reminded Hubert how he had watched over him when he was sick.

10. Hubert could not bear the kind words of the little fellow, and when he remembered the great pain he had felt when he got a small piece of straw in his eye, and the Prince asked him to kill him outright, he broke down altogether.

11. He promised the Prince he would take care of him, and left him so as to plan some way of escape.

12. The little boy after a time got afraid that the evil-looking men would come back, and tried to get out of his room to hide himself.

13. He got out of the window, but fell and was killed.

### 7.—Robin Hood's Death

1. When Robin Hood and Little John  
Went o'er yon bank of broom,  
Said Robin Hood to Little John,  
“We have shot for many a pound.
2. “But I am not able to shoot one  
shot more,

- My arrows will not flee,  
But I have a cousin who lives down  
there,  
Please Heaven, she will bleed  
me."
3. And when that he came to fair  
Kirkley Hall,  
He knocked all at the ring,  
But none was so ready as his cousin  
herself  
For to let bold Robin in.
4. "Will you please sit down, cousin  
Robin," she said,  
"And drink some beer with me?"  
"No, I will neither eat nor drink  
Till I am blooded by thee."
5. She blooded him in the vein of the  
arm,  
And lock'd him up in the room,  
There did he bleed all the livelong  
day  
Until the next day at noon.

MACMILLAN'S  
HISTORY READERS.

SIMPLE STORIES  
FROM ENGLISH HISTORY

READING BOOK

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS



MACMILLAN AND CO.  
BEDFORD STREET, STRAND, LONDON  
AND NEW YORK

1895

6. He then bethought him of his bugle  
    horn,  
    Which hung low down to his knee,  
He set his horn unto his mouth  
    And blew out weak blasts three.
7. Then Little John, when hearing him,  
    As he sat under the tree :  
    “ I fear my master is nearly dead,  
    He blows so wearily.”
8. Then Little John to Kirkley is gone,  
    As fast as he can flee,  
But when he came to Kirkley Hall,  
    He broke locks two or three.
9. Until he came bold Robin to,  
    Then he fell on his knee,  
    “ A boon ! a boon ! ” cries Little  
    John,  
    “ Master, I beg of thee.”
10. “ What is that boon,” quoth Robin  
    Hood,  
    “ Little John, thou beggest of me ? ”

“It is to burn fair Kirkley Hall  
And all their nunnery !”

11. “Now nay, now nay,” quoth Robin  
Hood,



“GIVE ME MY BENT BOW IN MY HAND, AND A BROAD ARROW.”

“That boon I’ll not grant thee ;  
I never hurt a woman in all my  
life,  
Nor man in woman’s company.

12. "I never hurt fair maid in all my  
time,

Nor at my end shall it be ;  
But give me my bent bow in my  
hand,

And a broad arrow I'll let flee ;  
And where this arrow is taken up,  
There shall my grave digged be.

13. "Let me have length and breadth  
enough,

With a green sod under my head,  
That they may say when I am dead,  
'Here lies bold Robin Hood.'"

### 8.—The Bards

1. Before Edward the Third's reign  
Wales was a separate country with a  
King of its own.

2. But Edward made war on the  
Welsh, and the King was beaten and  
killed in the battle.

3. Though their Prince was dead, the



Welsh people would not give in to Edward.

4. In those days it was hardly possible to get into some parts of Wales, and bands of the Welsh hid among the hills and, whenever they could, fell on parties of Englishmen and killed as many as they could.

5. The spirit of the people was kept up by the Bards, who told stories and sang of the old Welsh heroes.

6. These Bards played well on the harp, and were such clever singers and verse-makers that they made the people think there were no men as good or brave as the Welsh Kings, and willing to die rather than submit to an English King.

7. Edward at last ordered his soldiers to hunt down and kill every Bard they could find.

8. The poor Bards, who only did what was right in defending their homes, were hunted into the woods and hills, and in a

little time were all killed but one who lived on the top of a high rock where the soldiers could not get at him.



THE BARD STOOD ON THE TOP OF THE ROCK AND SANG A STRANGE SONG.

9. The lonely Bard grew weary of his life, and one day, as Edward and his army were marching along by the side of the river, the Bard stood on the top of the

rock and sang a strange song in which he foretold all sorts of evils that would come on Edward for his cruelty.

10. The soldiers were very angry, and tried to get up the rock to kill the Bard.

11. But the old singer, having finished his song, cursed Edward and his soldiers, and then flung himself down the rock into the river.

12. He was never heard or seen again, and though in him the last of the Bards died, the people would not give way, and said they would not have a Prince who was not born in Wales or who could speak English.

13. When Edward heard of this he called all their leaders to meet him and said: "If I give you a prince born in Wales, and who cannot speak English, will you obey him?" They cried out that they would.

14. Then the King took his little son, who was only a few days old, and showing him to the people, said: "Here is

your Prince, for he was born in Wales and cannot speak a word of English."

15. The people were tricked, but they kept their word, and ever since the eldest son of the King of England is called the Prince of Wales.

### 9.—The Prince and the Outlaw

1. Oh, it was our gallant Prince Edward,  
Rode forth into Alton wood ;  
His plume was white, his sword was  
bright,  
His heart was brave and good ;  
He saw the sunlight through the trees,  
Checkering the grassy earth,  
He felt the breath of the summer's  
breeze,  
And his spirit was full of mirth.
2. It was there he met with a stranger  
knight,  
With disdain upon his face ;  
His mail was worn, and his eye spake  
scorn,

And full stately was his pace.

“Now who art thou, of the darksome  
brow,

Who wanderest here so free?”

“Oh! I’m one will walk the green  
green wood,

Nor ever ask leave of thee!”

3. “How now, thou churl!” quoth the  
angry Prince,

“Ask pardon on thy knee;

I am England’s heir, of my wrath  
beware,

Or ill shall it fare with thee.”

“Art thou England’s heir?” quoth the  
outlaw bold,

“Well, if thy words be true,

I see not why such a knight as I  
Should fear for such as you.

4. “I am Adam de Gordon, a noble free,  
Perchance thou hast heard my  
name?”

“I have heard it, I trow,” quoth the  
Prince, “and thou

Art a traitor of blackest fame—  
Yield thou to me !” But the outlaw  
cried,

“Now, if thou knowest not fear,  
Out with thy sword ! by a good  
knight’s word  
I will give thee better here.”

5. “Come on !” cried that Prince of  
dauntless heart,

“Yet, pause, while I alight,  
For I never will play the craven’s part,  
At odds with thee to fight.”

He sprang from his steed, he drew his  
blade,

And a terrible fray began ;  
The very first stroke that Prince  
Edward made,  
Blood from the Gordon ran.

6. The Gordon is pale, and his strength  
doth fail,

And his blood is ebbing fast,  
But the spirit so high in his flashing  
eye

Is dauntless to the last.

He hath struck the Prince on the  
mailed breast,

But the Prince laughed scornfully :  
“ Oh, was it the wood breeze stirred  
my vest,  
Or a leaf from yonder tree ? ”

7. There is bitter grief in the Gordon's  
eye,

For he feels his strength depart ;  
It is not that he fears to die—

To be conquered grieves his heart.  
He sinks, like a gallant ship o'er-  
thrown

By the blast and the driving surf ;  
“ I yield me not ” is his last faint tone  
As he falls on the trampled turf.

8. The Prince was proud as a reinless  
steed,—

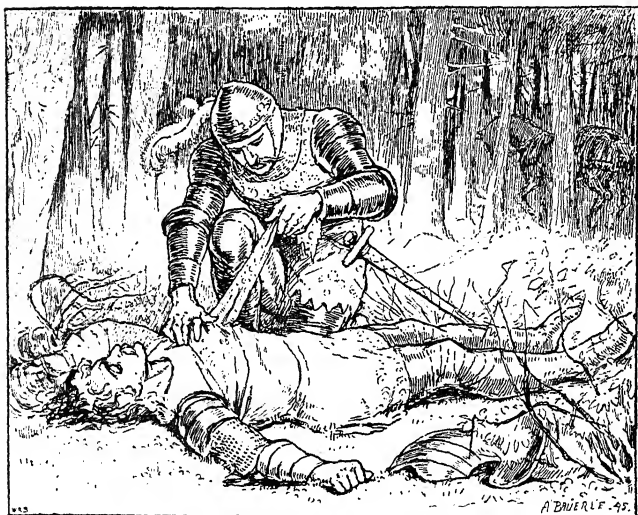
Pride is an evil thing,—  
But the heart he bore was a heart  
indeed,  
Right worthy of a King !

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
1. Hereward . . . . .	5
2. The Angry Prince . . . . .	10
3. The Faithful Page . . . . .	12
4. King John and the Abbot of Canterbury—Part I. . . . .	15
5.     ,,         ,,         ,,                     Part II. . . . .	21
6. Arthur . . . . .	26
7. Robin Hood's Death . . . . .	28
8. The Bards . . . . .	32
9. The Prince and the Outlaw . . . . .	36
10. The Prince of Wales' Feathers . . . . .	41
11. Chevy-Chase—Part I. . . . .	44
12.     ,,         Part II. . . . .	48
13. Madcap Harry . . . . .	51
14. King Henry V. and the Hermit . . . . .	54
15. Sir Thomas More . . . . .	59
16. Lady Jane Grey . . . . .	64
17. The Ring . . . . .	69
18. Sir Walter Raleigh . . . . .	72
19. The Royal Oak . . . . .	78
20. The Black Hole of Calcutta . . . . .	80
21. Wolfe . . . . .	85
22. Casabianca . . . . .	88
23. Puffing Billy . . . . .	93



He sheathed his blade, he sprang to aid  
The Gordon as he lay :  
“ Rise up ! ” he cried, “ my valorous foe,  
Thou hast borne thee well to-day.”



WITH HIS SCARF HE BOUND EACH GAPING WOUND.

9. He kneeled by his side, he hath  
    staunched the tide  
    Of the life-blood flowing free ;  
With his scarf he bound each gaping  
    wound,  
And he soothed their agony.

He lifted the Gordon on his steed,  
Himself he held the rein ;  
“ I hold thee,” he said, “ for a knight  
indeed,  
And I give thee thy life again.”

### 10.—The Prince of Wales' Feathers

1. In the olden times the chief soldiers wore so much armour that it was hardly possible to tell one man from another.

2. Each knight chose some figure, which was put on his shield, armour, or flag, with some form of words, which served as a mark.

3. The three ostrich feathers which are the badge of the Prince of Wales were first chosen after a great battle in France some five hundred years ago.

4. Edward the Third was trying to get the Crown of France as well as England, and he had with him a very brave, though not very large army, and

his son, the Black Prince as he was called.

5. The Prince was but sixteen, yet he acted as leader in the fight, his father watching the battle from a hill near.

6. In the midst of the fight the King was asked to send help to his son, who was in great danger ; but he simply asked, "Is my son dead or wounded?"

7. "Neither," said the soldier who had come to the King.

8. "Then," replied the King, "let the boy win the day himself."

9. In the French army one of the leaders was the King of Bohemia, who, though blind, was very eager to join in the fight.

10. Two of his knights fastened their horses to his and forced their way into the front of the fight.

11. But after a few strokes the poor old King was killed with the knights who had done as they were told.

12. After the battle the bodies were

found, and near them the banner of the King, on which was painted three large ostrich feathers with the two German words which mean "I serve."



THE BLACK PRINCE SHOWED HIS FATHER THE BANNER.

13. The Black Prince showed his father the banner, and the King said, "My son, let this badge and motto be

yours in memory of the victory which you won this day."

14. "I shall wear the motto," replied the Prince, "to remind me that I serve my King and country."

### 11.—Chevy-Chase—Part I.

1. The stout Earl of Northumberland,  
A vow he did once make,  
His pleasure in the Scottish woods  
Three summer days to take,
2. The chiefest harts in Chevy-Chase  
To kill and bear away.  
These tidings to Earl Douglas came,  
In Scotland where he lay,
3. Who sent Earl Percy present word  
He would prevent his sport.  
The English Earl, not fearing that,  
Did to the woods resort
4. With fifteen hundred bowmen bold,  
All chosen men of might,

Who knew full well in time of need  
To aim their shafts aright.

5. The hounds ran swiftly through the  
woods,



THE STOUT EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

The nimble deer to take,  
That with their cries the hills and  
dales  
An echo shrill did make.

6. Lord Percy to the quarry went  
To view the slaughtered deer ;

Quoth he, "Earl Douglas promised  
This day to meet me here.

7. "But if I thought he would not come,  
No longer would I stay."  
With that, a brave young gentleman  
Thus to the Earl did say :
8. "Lo, yonder doth Earl Douglas come,  
His men in armour bright,  
Full twenty hundred Scottish spears  
All marching in our sight.
9. Earl Douglas on his milk-white steed,  
Most like a baron bold,  
Rode foremost of his company,  
Whose armour shone like gold.
10. "Show me," said he, "whose men  
you be  
That hunt so boldly here,  
That, without my consent, do chase  
And kill my fallow deer."
11. The man that first did answer make  
Was noble Percy, he,

Who said, "We list not to declare,  
Nor show whose men we be."

12. Our English archers bent their bows,  
Their hearts were good and true ;  
At the first flight of arrows sent,  
Full three-score Scots they slew.
13. Yet bides Earl Douglas on the bent,  
As chieftain stout and good,  
As valiant captain, all unmoved,  
The shock he firmly stood.
14. Throughout the English archery  
They dealt full many a wound ;  
But still our valiant Englishmen  
All firmly kept their ground,
15. And throwing straight their bows  
away,  
They grasp'd their swords so  
bright,  
And now sharp blows in heavy  
showers  
On shields and helmets light.



## 12.—Chevy-Chase—Part II.

1. At last these two stout Earls did  
meet  
Like captains of great might,



AT LAST THESE TWO STOUT EARLS DID MEET.

- Like lions moved, they laid on load  
And made a cruel fight.
2. “Yield thee, Lord Percy,” Douglas  
said ;

“In faith I will thee bring,  
Where thou shalt high advancèd be  
By James our Scottish king.

3. “Thy ransom I will freely give,  
And thus report of thee :  
Thou art the most courageous knight  
That ever I did see.”

4. “No, Douglas,” quoth Earl Percy  
then,  
“Thy proffer I do scorn ;  
I will not yield to any Scot  
That ever yet was born.”

5. With that there came an arrow keen  
Out of an English bow,  
Which struck Earl Douglas to the  
heart,  
A deep and deadly blow.

6. A knight among the Scots there was  
Who saw Earl Douglas die,  
Who straight in wrath did vow  
revenge,  
Upon the Earl Percy.

## 1.—Hereward

1. William the First, called the Conqueror, had a great deal of trouble to make the English take him as King.

2. Great numbers of the chief men had been killed at the battle of Hastings. Others went abroad, but some stayed in the country and formed bands who lived in the forests and marshy lands.

3. The most famous of these bands was in the marshy land about Ely and the fens generally.

4. William got his crown by force, and he only kept it by being very harsh and •cruel; and in some parts of the country he hardly left an English family.

5. The brave men who were in hiding  
Ⓔ

7. Sir Hugh Montgomery was he called;  
Who with a spear most bright,  
Well mounted on a gallant steed,  
Ran fiercely through the fight,
8. And passed the English archers all  
Without or dread or fear,  
And through Earl Percy's body then  
He thrust his hateful spear.
9. So thus did both these nobles die,  
Whose courage none could stain.  
An English archer then perceived  
The noble Earl was slain
10. He had a bow bent in his hand,  
Made of a trusty tree ;  
An arrow of a cloth-yard long  
Up to the head drew he :
11. Against Sir Hugh Montgomery,  
So right the shaft he set,  
The gray goose wing that was,  
thereon  
In his heart's blood was wet.

12. This fight did last from break of day  
Till setting of the sun,  
For when they rang the evening bell  
The battle scarce was done.
13. Of fifteen hundred Englishmen  
Went home but fifty-three  
The rest were slain in Chevy-Chase  
Under the greenwood tree.

### 13.—Madcap Harry

1. King Henry the Fourth had a son who was so fond of games and so free with everybody that he was called Harry the Madcap.

2. He was a noisy fellow, and very fond of going out at night into the streets in disguise.

3. One of his friends was a big, fat, good-humoured man called Sir John Falstaff.

4. He was a merry fellow, and at the bottom of many of the Prince's wild pranks.

5. One night as they were together singing and making all sorts of noises as they drank, Sir John proposed that they should go out and rob some people whom he knew were coming from Rochester to London with a great deal of money.

6. The Prince thought this a very good joke, and agreed to go.

7. They met the travellers, and having robbed them went to a tavern and got a good supper with a great deal of wine.

8. But the people who had lost their money went to the Sheriff and asked for his help in taking the thieves.

9. The Sheriff's party soon got into the tavern, but were surprised and frightened to see the Prince of Wales having his supper with the party of supposed robbers.

10. But some of the travellers knew the big Falstaff and some others of the party, and the Sheriff took the whole gang before a judge.

11. The Judge ordered the whole party except the Prince to be put in jail.

12. This made Harry so angry that he gave the Judge a box on the ear.

13. The Judge then did his duty and



THE JUDGE THEN DID HIS DUTY AND SENT THE PRINCE TO JAIL.

sent the Prince to jail with the rest, and he had no food all night.

14. Early the next morning the good, just Judge went to the King and told him the whole story.

15. The King was very pleased at what had been done, and the Prince begged the Judge's pardon for his bad conduct in court.

16. When the Prince became King he would not have Falstaff and the rest near him, but he made the brave Judge Lord Chief Justice of England, saying: "Since you were so honest as to put the law in force against me, I am sure you will always use it to protect the people."

#### 14.—King Henry V. and the Hermit

1. He passed unquestioned through the  
camp ;

Their heads the soldiers bent  
In silent reverence, or begged  
A blessing as he went ;  
And so the Hermit passed along,  
And reached the royal tent.

2. King Henry sat in his tent alone :  
The map before him lay :



Fresh conquests he was planning  
there  
To grace the future day.



KING HENRY V. AND THE HERMIT.

3. King Henry lifted up his eyes  
The intruder to behold.  
With reverence he the Hermit saw,  
For the holy man was old ;

His look was gentle as a saint's,  
And yet his eye was bold.

4. "Repent thee, Henry, of the wrongs  
Which thou hast done this land !  
O King, repent in time, for know  
The judgment is at hand !
5. "I have passed forty years of peace  
Beside the river Blaise ;  
But what a weight of woe hast thou  
Laid on my latter days !
6. "I used to see along the stream  
The white sail gliding down,  
That wafted food in better times  
To yonder peaceful town.
7. "Henry ! I never now behold  
The white sail gliding down :  
Famine, Disease, and Death, and  
Thou  
Destroy that wretched town.
8. "I used to hear the traveller's voice  
As here he passed along,

Or maiden as she loitered home  
Singing her even-song.

9. No traveller's voice may now be  
heard ;  
In fear he hastens by ;  
But I have heard the village maid  
In vain for succour cry.
10. "I used to hear the youths row  
down,  
And watch the dripping oar,  
As pleasantly their viol's tones  
Came softened to the shore.
11. "King Henry ! many a blackened  
corpse  
I now see floating down !  
Thou man of blood ! repent in time,  
And leave this leaguered town."
12. "I shall go on," King Henry cried,  
"And conquer this good land :  
Seest thou not, Hermit, that the  
Lord  
Hath given it to my hand ?"

13. The Hermit heard King Henry  
    speak,  
    And angrily looked down ;  
His face was gentle, but for that  
    More solemn was his frown.
14. “What if no miracle from Heaven  
    The murderer’s arm control?  
Think you for that the weight of  
    blood  
    Lies lighter on his soul?
15. “Thou Conqueror King, repent in  
    time,  
    Or dread the coming woe !  
For, Henry, thou hast heard the  
    threat  
    And soon shalt feel the blow !”
16. King Henry forced a careless smile  
    As the Hermit went his way,  
But Henry soon remembered him  
    Upon his dying day.

### 15.—Sir Thomas More

1. About the time that the two little Princes were murdered in the Tower there was living a little boy of about seven.

2. He was a kind, good-natured little fellow, fond of animals, and always saying funny and clever things.

3. His father was one of the judges of the land, and had to see that people who broke the laws were punished. He was very glad to see his little son such a bright boy, and thought to himself, "He shall serve the King some day."

4. At that time the King's chief minister was an old man who had seen a great many changes, and who had been a true friend to the King when he had been many times in danger of his life.

5. As the boy grew up his father sent him to live at the house of this old

fought whenever they could, and killed many of the Normans.

6. The Lord of Bourn had a son named Hereward who was very tall and strong and was so fond of fighting that he was sent out of the country.

7. Hereward was over the sea when some of the English who had got away told Hereward that his father was dead, and that his mother had been driven out of her home and the land given to a Norman soldier.

8. As soon as he heard this he returned to England in a great rage ; and, gathering a small band of friends together, he drove the Normans away from his old home and put back his mother.

9. This of course brought him into trouble, and he had to be always on the watch against the Normans.

10. He formed in the Isle of Ely a strong camp called the " Camp of Refuge."

minister of the King, to learn by watching what was done, and by helping the old man, how the business of the King ought to be done.

6. As the old man was, next to the King, the most important man in the country, a great many others of the chief men and women were often coming to the house.

7. The boy was fond of hearing them talk, and stored up very much of what he heard for use in after life. The old minister grew very fond of the merry, kind-hearted, and sharp little boy, and often said, "Whoever may live to see it, that boy will become a great man."

8. Thomas was sent to the chief schools of the country, and learned eagerly, making a great many friends.

9. On becoming a man, Thomas More made up his mind to use all his knowledge for the good of his country.

10. He became one of the men who make our laws; and when the King

wished to make the people pay more money than was right, young Thomas was not afraid to speak against it.

11. He was one of the best speakers of his day, and helped many poor people to get out of trouble. At Chelsea he had a home which he thought the best place in all the world, for there were his little children and their mother.

12. He often used to bring his friends home to show them his children, and their rabbits and pet monkey. King Henry himself would come sometimes and walk with Thomas up and down the nice garden that he had. When he had to be away from home, he would send nice little letters to his children.

13. The King was very fond of Thomas, and made him one of the highest men in England. But soon the King became tired of his wife, and wanted to make some changes which More thought were wrong.

14. He felt he could not do as the



King wanted, and so gave up the work he was doing for the King. But King Henry wanted every man to swear that what he had done was right, and was cruel enough to put to death many who would not do this.

15. More was brought up before the court, and many of his friends tried hard to get him to swear in order to save his life.

16. But More said, "I must do what I believe to be right." His enemies were now very cruel, and said all sorts of wicked and untrue things about him, and would hardly let him speak to show them to be false.

17. He was kept in the Tower of London for more than a year, and treated so badly that when he was brought out to be put to death his hair had turned quite white, and he was so weak that he had to walk with a stick.

18. His daughter Margaret rushed through the crowd of soldiers that were

round him, and hung round his neck weeping, begging him to swear as the King wished. To say "No" to the



MARGARET RUSHED THROUGH THE CROWD OF SOLDIERS AND HUNG  
ROUND HIS NECK

daughter that he loved was worse to the father than death, but he said kindly, "I cannot do that."

19. When he came to the place where

his head was to be cut off, he spoke cheerfully to his friends around, and said to the headsman, "Friend, you are going to do me the greatest kindness that any man can, for you will open the door to the great life after this one."

20. The axe fell, and good Sir Thomas More was dead. His head was fixed on a spike on London Bridge, but the brave daughter came and stole it away. She kept it until she herself died, when it was buried with her.

### 16.—Lady Jane Grey

1. If we pass under the gateway in the Tower of London where the little Princes were killed, we shall soon come to the strong square tower which William the Conqueror built. It stands right away from the other buildings.

2. We shall see a little chapel where the people who lived in the tower used to go.

3. Near this chapel, on the left hand, is a little tower in the wall that goes all round the court.

4. Up some dark stairs there is a room with many corners. We can see that some people have been carving their names in the stone, and sometimes little verses as well.

5. These names were all cut by the poor people who were locked up in this room long ago.

6. Many of them were only taken out to walk to a place outside the moat, where they were killed.

7. There on the wall is one name carved very plain. JANE. Was it a lady then that was shut up in this room?

8. There was a great Duke who made up his mind that his son should be King of England. The King was a very weakly lad, not at all likely to live, and when he died his sister Mary would be Queen.

9. But the boy King had a cousin

called Jane: a very beautiful, clever, and good girl.

10. The great Duke thought, "If this Lady Jane marries my son, we will put Mary into prison, and then they can be King and Queen of England."

11. They were married, and soon after the boy King died.

12. Then the great Duke sent criers all over London to tell the people that Lady Jane was their Queen. He showed the people a letter which the King had written saying that he would like his cousin Jane to be Queen.

13. In those days all the Kings and Queens used to live at the Tower for the first few days of their reign for safety.

14. For nine days Lady Jane lived in the Tower as Queen of England, but she was not happy.

15. She did not want to be Queen, because she knew she had no right to be. She was very fond of reading, and longed

to live the same quiet happy life which she had done before.

16. All this time her cousin Mary had been getting men to help her to become Queen instead of Jane.

17. She soon got a good many soldiers, and they marched to London. Then they went to the Tower and told Lady Jane that she was not a Queen any longer, and they must lock her up in the Tower, and her young husband was put in this room where all the names are carved.

18. They stayed in the Tower until some one tried to drive Mary away. Then she was afraid, and believed that Lady Jane and her husband had caused it.

19. But though they had not, Queen Mary made up her mind to put them to death.

20. The husband went first to the place of death, and Jane from her window saw him being led away by the soldiers.

21. Very soon they came back for

Jane, and so she knew her husband was dead. She was led along under the gateway of the Bloody Tower, and through



JANE SAW HIM BEING LED AWAY.

the other gates, until she reached the street.

22. Crowds of people had come to see her die, but she walked bravely and quietly up the steps to the platform and, said to the people, "I am sorry they made me Queen. I never wished to be."

11. Strong men from all parts joined Hereward, and he became strong enough to fight large parties of the Normans ; and Hereward was such a good leader that the Normans thought he won his fights by magic.

12. Hereward's men lived very snug in their camp for about five years, when William thought it was time the camp was broken up.

13. This was easier ordered than done, for hardly any one knew where it was, and there were no roads through the fens.

14. There was not water enough for boats, and the ground was not firm enough to bear horses or large bodies of men.

15. William cut trenches to drain off the water, and made a road three miles long, but Hereward gave the workmen a great deal of trouble.

16. He burst out first on one side and then on the other, and killed so many



23. With one blow of the sharp axe poor Jane was dead.

24. It was Lady Jane's husband who cut the name, for he was always thinking of her while he was shut up in that dreary room.

### 17.—The Ring

1. Amongst the young noblemen who were at the court of Queen Elizabeth, one of her greatest favourites was the Earl of Essex.

2. He was not only young and handsome, but clever and agreeable.

3. The young Earl was soon spoiled by the Queen's favour and his good fortune generally, and became proud and masterful.

4. After a little time he behaved so badly that there were many serious quarrels between him and the Queen.

5. Generally these quarrels were soon made up, and once the Queen was in such good humour with her favourite

that she gave him a beautiful ring and told him to keep it carefully, and if at any time he sent it to her, no matter



SHE GAVE HIM A BEAUTIFUL RING.

what he had done, she would forgive him.

6. Some time afterwards Lord Essex thought the Queen had slighted him, and in a great temper he began a riot.

7. For this he was tried, found guilty, and his head was to be cut off.

8. The Queen waited day after day, hoping to receive the ring, but it never came.

9. At last the Queen lost patience, and as she thought Essex did not care for her and was too proud, she gave orders for his death, and he was beheaded.

10. The Queen was angry, but she became very sad when Essex was dead, and almost mad when she knew the truth.

11. Essex had sent the ring by the Countess of Nottingham, who was a relation.

12. But her husband was an enemy of Essex, and would not allow her to go to the Queen, say anything about the ring, or return it to Essex.

13. Some time afterwards Lady Nottingham, being near her death, sent to the Queen asking her to come

and see her, as she wished to tell her something before she died.

14. When the Queen got to her bedside Lady Nottingham gave the ring to Queen and told her the whole story.

15. Elizabeth was very angry, and burst out: "God may forgive you, but I never can."

16. She never seemed to recover from the shock, and died full of sorrow for her pride and cruelty.

### 18.—Sir Walter Raleigh

1. Down in the west of England is a fine old town called Bideford.

2. A broad river runs swiftly by the town to the sea. Along its banks is an open flat space called a quay, where ships can come up and goods can be taken out or put into them.

3. If you had been living at Bideford three hundred years ago you would often have seen playing about on the quay a

tall, handsome, bright-eyed boy, who seemed to be at home everywhere.

4. The sailors were very fond of having him about, because he was so quick and good-natured.

5. Little Walter Raleigh wanted to be a sailor, and could not be kept away from the ships.

6. He grew up to become one of the greatest sailors of the times, and fought bravely for the Queen against her enemy the King of Spain.

7. Queen Elizabeth was always very quick to see who were the best men, and liked to have them near her. She would walk in her grounds with them and talk to them.

8. One day Sir Walter and many other gentlemen were walking with the Queen in her grounds after a heavy shower of rain.

9. The Queen was dressed in very beautiful robes. There was a muddy pool right in front of her, and she stopped.

10. Sir Walter took off his splendid cloak and laid it down on the mud. The Queen was very pleased. She stepped



SIR WALTER TOOK OFF HIS SPLENDID CLOAK AND LAID IT  
DOWN ON THE MUD.

lightly over the cloak, and thought to herself, "I will give him some work to do for me, and he shall be as great as any man in my palace."

11. He sailed to America, which was

then nearly covered with great forests in which the Red Indians lived. He took over with him a good many English people who could find no work to do at home, and thought they would like to cut down the trees, sow and reap, and build towns in the new country of America.

12. But they treated the Red Indians badly, and drove them away from their lands.

13. The Indians were always fighting with the newcomers, and at last things got so bad that all the English who had not been killed by the Indians or starved were glad to come back to England again.

14. But Sir Walter brought home two things which had never been seen in England before. One was the potato, and the other was the dried leaf—tobacco—which the Indians smoked in their long pipes.

15. It took a long time for Sir Walter

to get people to eat potatoes. He had a house and many fields in Ireland, and planted them there.

16. One day Sir Walter's servant saw a cloud of smoke coming from his master's mouth. He at once thought him to be on fire, and taking a bucket of water, dashed it over Sir Walter's head.

17. He laughed afterwards at the odd mistake the servant had made, for he was only smoking a pipe !

18. When Queen Elizabeth died, the son of poor Mary Queen of Scots became King James of England.

19. He did not like Sir Walter, and listened to all the lies his enemies told about him.

20. He put Sir Walter in the Tower of London, and told him that he must die. But the people of England begged King James not to kill him, so he let him live in the Tower. His wife came to live there with him, and he had a little garden there of which he was very fond,



and a shed where he made a great many curious things.

21. At last he told King James that if he let him out he would go to America and bring back lots of gold. The King wanted money, and let Sir Walter go.

22. But the land to which he sailed belonged to the Spaniards, and Sir Walter and his men had to fight many times with them. They could get no gold at all, and King James was so angry that he said Raleigh must be beheaded.

23. Everybody thought this was very cruel and mean, because the King only did it to please the King of Spain ; but once more he was brought to the Tower of London, and in a few days the soldiers led him out and he was beheaded.

24. Sir Walter was not afraid to die, but took up the axe and felt the edge to see if it was sharp. Then the man sent to behead him fell down on his knees and begged Sir Walter not to blame him.

25. The King did many bad things during his reign, but this was one of the worst.

### 19.—The Royal Oak

1. Before Charles the Second was crowned he had to fight a good many battles.

2. After one of the fights, in which Charles's army was completely beaten, he had to fly for his life.

3. He was very nearly caught several times, for there were parties of soldiers all over the fields and woods in search of him.

4. Charles wandered about alone for several days, hiding himself in the thick bushes and living on the fruits and berries he could find in the fields and hedges.

5. One day he saw two of the soldiers who were looking for him coming near him from different sides, so that he could not get away without being seen.

men that the Normans became quite afraid of him.

17 The King at last agreed to engage an old woman who was supposed to be a witch to protect the soldiers.

18. She was put in a tall wooden tower which was placed at the end of the road, and the workmen began again.

19. Hereward cared no more for the witch than he did for the soldiers, and he soon finished her off; for he set fire to the reeds and burnt the tower and the witch.

20. The Normans were beaten again and again; but at last the monks of Ely, who were fond of good living and did not like their food being cut short by the soldiers and the camp men, showed the King a secret way to the camp.

21. The Normans surprised Hereward and his men, and after a fierce fight, in which they lost a great number of men, took the camp.

22. But Hereward and some of his

6. He was very frightened, but at last he got up into an oak tree growing near



THE ROYAL OAK.

where he was and hid himself among the thick branches, which were covered with leaves.

7. After some time the soldiers went

on without having any thought that the King was so near.

8. As the King wandered about, half dead with hunger and fright, he was met by a man who took him to his house in the woods and kept him safe for some days by employing him as a wood-chopper.

9. He finally escaped to France with a lady as her servant, and stayed there until recalled to England as King.

## 20.—The Black Hole of Calcutta

1. India is a large country more than twelve times the size of England, Scotland, and Ireland put together.

2. Most of the people there have very dark skins, and the languages they speak sound very strange.

3. Savage tigers prowl amongst the bushes and long grass, great snakes dangle down from the trees, and elephants run in herds through the great forests.

4. India now belongs to the English, is governed by English people, and guarded by English soldiers. But many years ago there were only a few Englishmen scattered about in the country. They lived there in order to sell English things to the Indians. There were a great many Frenchmen there too, trying to do better than the English.

5. When a war arose between the English and the French at home, the French in India made up their minds to drive all the English from the country.

6. Many of the English lived in a rich level plain called Bengal, through which the great river Ganges flows, and most of them lived near a very strong fort called Fort William. This fort is now in the great city of Calcutta, which has been built around it.

7. The old ruler of Bengal died, and the new ruler was a young man, Dowlah, who believed that the English had stored

up in Fort William a very great deal of money.

8. When the war between the English and the French began, the young man helped the French ; for he hated the English, who were keeping inside their fort a kinsman whom he wanted to kill.

9. It was a very great pity that the men who lived near the fort did not all act together and agree what to do. There were some ships not far off, with English sailors in them ; but the captains did not act like men, and seemed as if they did not know what to do.

10. Dowlah's guns began firing at the fort, and the English soldiers inside made a gallant fight.

11. But many of them got thirsty, for it was very hot, and they ran to some barrels of spirits and got drunk and stupid.

12. At last Dowlah's men with some ladders climbed the wall, and the

miserable drunken soldiers ran to a gate to get away.

13. Then all Dowlah's army poured into the fort through this gate, and Dowlah called for the chief Englishman.

14. "Give me all the money you have hoarded up," said Dowlah.

15. "There is only a little," said the Englishman; and that was the truth. But Dowlah would not believe him, and told him and the hundred and forty-five others that he would keep them in prison until they paid him the money.

16. In the fort was a room with only two little windows. Into this room the hundred and forty-six Englishmen were driven like cattle. All were pushed close together, and still some were outside. These were forced in with the points of swords, and the door was locked.

17. The night was very hot, and soon all except those close to the windows began to fight for air.

18. Outside one of the windows was



an old Indian slave, and he got a little water in a skin, which he put through the bars of the window.

19. Then the furious men inside fought for this water, while some soldiers outside,



THE FURIOUS MEN INSIDE FOUGHT FOR THIS WATER.

not so kind as the old slave, laughed at their torments.

20. Many went mad, and when morning came a hundred and twenty-three had died. When the door was at last opened the twenty-three that tottered

out had so altered that they scarcely knew each other. Some were so weak that they had to be carried.

21. This room has become famous as the Black Hole of Calcutta, and the story made the other Englishmen in India so angry with cruel Dowlah that they marched against him with a brave man at their head named Robert Clive.

22. Clive defeated Dowlah's army and took away his country from him. Ever since that time Bengal has belonged to England. Dowlah fled away, and was at last murdered in prison.

## 21.—Wolfe

1. The part of America called Canada was first taken by the French, who held it for many years.

2. But in one of the great wars with France the English leaders thought they would try to take it from the French.

3. The chief men at the War Office

sent for the generals, one after the other, to ask their advice.

4. One said it was impossible, another that it would be difficult, and so on.

5. But when the youngest general in the army, who was named Wolfe, was asked, he only said, "I will do it or die."

6. Wolfe was placed at the head of the army, which got safely across the sea and near to the chief town of Canada.

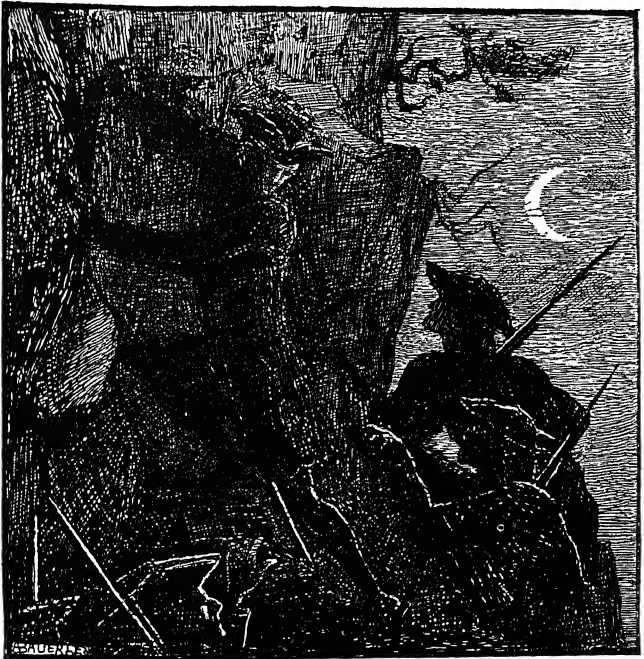
7. Quebec stands on a flat plain at the top of some high cliffs which rise very steeply from the river.

8. Wolfe tried several times to find a way up the rocks, but failed ; and he and many of his men fell sick.

9. At last a sort of path was found ; and though it was known that the French had guards all along the edge of the cliffs, Wolfe thought he could get his men up in the night and surprise them.

10. The ships sailed away as if Wolfe had given up the fight, but only went far enough down the river to be out of sight.

11. When the night was very dark, the soldiers were ordered to get into the ships' boats, and they went in them back to the cliffs near Quebec.



THE CLIFFS WERE VERY HARD TO CLIMB.

12. Everything was kept very quiet, and the men landed without being found out.

13. The cliffs were very hard to climb ; but at last, by holding on to the bushes, they reached the top.

14. In the morning the French were alarmed to find the English soldiers so near, but they bravely attacked them.

15. After a severe fight the English began to get the better of it, but Wolfe was badly wounded.

16. Just before he died he heard the words, " They run, they run."

17. " Who run ? " he asked ; and when he was told that it was the French, he said, " God be praised ! I shall die in peace ! "

18. The brave man's work was done, for soon after the whole of Canada was in the hands of the English.

## 22.—Casabianca

1. Egypt is about half way to India, and it was only about fifty years after

best men got away along paths which the Normans could not find.

23. Some time after this Hereward had the good fortune to take prisoner



THE MONKS SHOWED THE KING A SECRET WAY TO THE CAMP.

one of William's friends, and he would not let him go until William promised to let him have his land again.

24. William was glad to do this, because he was getting old and wanted

the Black Hole of Calcutta that we were fighting again with the French people.

2. Their leader was Napoleon, and he made up his mind to land his armies in Egypt, and when he had taken that country, to go on to India and take it away from the English.

3. England had a brave sailor, Nelson, who said that he would follow Napoleon and take away his ships, so that he could neither get back to France nor go on to India.

4. When Nelson got to Egypt he saw the ships of Napoleon all in a line near the shore, and he sailed his ships close to the French ships.

5. There was a fearful thunder of cannon, and crashing of great cannon balls into the sides of the ships.

6. On one of Napoleon's ships called the *Orient* there was an officer who had to tell the men how and when to fire their guns. He had his little boy with him—

a brave little fellow, just like Nelson was when a boy.

7. Before the battle began, the little boy's father had told him to stay in one place until he should tell him to leave it, thinking that there his little son would be out of danger. The father went away to see to his guns, and the fight went on—beginning in the afternoon, and going on into the evening.

8. It became dark, and little Casabianca could see ships blazing up around him, masts and sails falling into the water, and sometimes whole ships getting full of water and sinking.

9. No father came to tell him that he might leave his post, although the little fellow waited. Cannon balls and bullets fell all round him, and the sailors on board were being dreadfully hurt, and sometimes killed by the shots and falling timbers.

10. Sometimes darkness covered everything, and then some blazing



ship lit up the sky, and he could see men clinging to bits of masts or planks, and boats full of men trying to get away from some sinking ship.



CASABIANCA.

11. On the *Orient* they kept a great deal of powder, and suddenly Casabianca heard the dreadful cry, "The ship is on fire."

12. Men rushed up from below, and from all parts of the ship, and crowded into the boats to get away.

13. "Father, dear father," shouted the boy; but no father came. He was lying dead below. The men cried to the boy, "Come with us"; but he replied, "I cannot go. I have promised my father to stay."

14. "Come, while there is time," shouted the men, but the boy stood firm.

15. The flames grew brighter, nearer, and hotter, and he cried, "My father! Must I stay?" But nothing was heard except the roaring of the fire, the splashing of the water, and the thunder of the cannon.

16. Suddenly fierce flames leaped out from the sides of the vessel and flashed into the air high above it. The *Orient* burst into a thousand pieces, for the flames had reached the powder.

17. The dark sea and sky were lighted

up by the glare of the flames, and so terrified. were all that saw it that for ten minutes no gun was fired. Casabianca had perished, but his brave deed has made him loved for many years to come.

18. Napoleon's ships were destroyed, and he could neither get home nor sail to India. This battle on the sea all through the dark night was known as the Battle of the Nile.

### 23.—Puffing Billy

1. About one hundred years ago there lived in a little village near Newcastle a poor man named Stephenson.

2. He worked on the bank of a coal-pit, minding the engine that drew up the coal from the pit.

3. His wages were very small, and as there were six children besides the mother, it was often hard work to find food for them.

4. None of the children went to school, but were sent to work as soon as they were big enough to do anything.

5. George, the second son, was a



WHILST MINDING COWS IN THE FIELD HE TRIED TO MAKE MODELS.

bright little chap, and took his father's dinner every day, and used to sit and watch the engine working whilst his father had his food.

6. The engine and boiler were wonder-

ful things to the boy, and whilst minding cows in the field for a farmer he tried to make models of them out of clay or wood.

7. As he got older he went to work with his father, and when eighteen years of age he was placed in charge of an engine by himself.

8. George did not waste his time in the evenings, but went to a night school and learned to read, write, and do some little arithmetic.

9. Up to this time no one had found out how to make an engine that would move from place to place.

10. George Stephenson thought he would try to make such an engine, and worked very hard for some time with his son Robert.

11. At last, after many attempts, they made an engine which would run along rails, and they called it Puffing Billy.

12. Shortly after this a prize was

offered by the people who were making a railway from Liverpool to Manchester.

13. The Stephensons built an engine which they called the Rocket, and sent it to be tried with the others.

14. There were lots of engines, but they all broke down except the Rocket, which went along merrily dragging a coach full of people.

After this railways were made all over the country, and father and son ~~were~~ ~~very~~ busy in making engines for them, and both became rich men.

even some of the great public schools were asked to give an account of their trusteeship—much to their indignation. But the main result of all this activity was Brougham's Parish Schools Bill of 1820, "for the better Education of the Poor in England and Wales." The schools were to be erected at the expense of the manufacturers. The cost of maintenance was to fall on the rates, though school fees of 2*d.* to 4*d.* a week were to be paid by such parents as could afford them; and the application of the redistributed educational endowments was to be a further source of revenue. Schoolmasters were to be members of the Church of England and appointed by the parish vestry. The clergyman could also veto their appointment and dismiss them. He was to have unlimited 'right of entry' to the school and the duty of determining the curriculum. Brougham's proposals, like those of Whitbread, had in view a *national* system of education; but it is not surprising that they aroused very strong opposition among dissenters and Roman Catholics; even the supporters of the Established Church were lukewarm. The Bill was accordingly withdrawn.

The parliamentary committee had collected statistics which may not be very reliable, but had been used by Brougham in support of his Bill. According to these, there were in 1820 some 500,000 children in the unendowed schools, of whom 53,000 were being "educated, or rather not educated," at dame schools. There were also 165,432 pupils in the endowed schools. In some of the counties, particularly where there was much child labour, the proportion was very low—1 in 24 in Lancashire, and 1 in 26 in Middlesex, "beyond all dispute the worst educated part of Christendom." In Westmorland the children at school formed 1 in 7 of the total population. This worked out at an average of about 1 in 14 or 15 of the population over the whole country—or 1 in 16 if the dame schools were not counted

in. Brougham reckoned that the proportion ought rightly to be 1 in 8; and if the figures are at all reliable, there was obviously a considerable deficiency in the schooling available. One has also to remember that the average school life at the time was short—perhaps not more than one and a half or two years. But, for all that, there had been considerable improvements since the beginning of the century, largely due to the efforts of the National Society and the British and Foreign School Society. Brougham himself said, in a speech in the House of Commons: “The average means of mere education was only in fact one-sixteenth in England; yet even this scanty means had only existed since the year 1803, when what were called the new schools, or those upon the systems of Dr. Bell and Mr. Lancaster, were established. Those schools were in number 1,520, and they received about 200,000 children. Before 1803, then, only the twenty-first part of the population was placed in the way of education, and at that date England might be justly looked on as the worst-educated country of Europe.”<sup>1</sup> Thus it was argued that under the existing voluntary system popular education, though it had still far to go, was making progress. Even Brougham, though he wished to multiply schools and increase their population, was no advocate of free education. “It was his great object that, whilst measures were adopted for bringing education home to the doors of all, all should still pay a little for it.”<sup>2</sup>

All through the 1820's the power of liberal thought was growing. The year 1825 saw the formation of the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge.<sup>3</sup> It was the outcome of a pamphlet by Brougham, entitled *Observations on*

<sup>1</sup> *Hansard*, N.S.2, 1820, col. 61.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, col. 77.

<sup>3</sup> In 1816 Bentham had published a book called *Chrestomathia*, which proposed to set up a school to give instruction which would be ‘conducive to useful knowledge.’ A good account of the scheme is given in Adamson, *English Education*, 1760–1902, pp. 102–5.



*the Education of the People*, and its object was to popularise science and general knowledge by the publication of instructive books at a low price. In 1828 was founded the secular University of London, of which more will be said in a later chapter. The repeal of the Test Acts in the same year recognised the civil rights of nonconformists, for hitherto they had been excluded from holding national or municipal offices. This was followed in 1829 by the Catholic Emancipation Act, which gave similar rights to Roman Catholics. Finally, in 1832, came the Reform Bill, which gave the franchise to the 'ten pound householders' in the boroughs, and so redistributed seats that the large centres of industrial population, now converted into new boroughs, were represented in Parliament. Thus the middle classes and the manufacturing towns now sent their members to the House of Commons. This was only a stage in the direction of complete popular representation; but it is intensely significant, because it was carried through by the force of "popular will against the strenuous resistance of the old order as entrenched in the House of Lords."<sup>1</sup> Thus, by the Reform Act of 1832, the balance of power in the Commons passed to the newly enfranchised middle classes, and popular education therefore was regarded more than ever as a matter of urgency.

This feeling was voiced in Parliament in 1833. John Arthur Roebuck (1801-79) had taken Brougham's place as champion of popular education in the House of Commons, for the latter had been translated to the Upper House as Baron Brougham and Vaux. "Education," said Roebuck, "means, not merely these necessary means or instruments for the acquiring of knowledge, but it means also the so training or fashioning the intellectual and moral qualities of the

<sup>1</sup> Trevelyan, *British History in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 241. In this book there is a dramatic account of the whole struggle. See pp. 232-42.

individual, that he may be able and willing to acquire knowledge, and to turn it to its right use.”<sup>1</sup> He viewed education in the light of the growth of democracy: “I wish the people to be enlightened, that they may use the power well which they will inevitably obtain.” He stressed the fact that France, Prussia, and Saxony had already introduced systems of compulsory popular education. And so he put forward the motion that “the House, duly impressed with the necessity for a due Education of the People at large, and believing that to this end the aid and care of the State are absolutely needed, will, early during the next Session of Parliament, proceed to devise means for the universal and national Education of the whole People.”<sup>2</sup> The plan which he advocated was more thorough-going than that of either Whitbread or Brougham. “In general terms, I would say, that I would oblige, by law, every child in Great Britain and Ireland, from, perhaps, six years of age to twelve years of age to be a regular attendant at school. If the parents be able to give, and actually do give their children elsewhere sufficient education, then they should not be compelled to send them to the national school. If, however, they should be unable or unwilling to give them such instruction, then the State should step in and supply this want, by compelling the parent to send the child to the school of the State.”<sup>3</sup> Roebuck proposed to set up schools of four types—infant schools, schools of industry, evening schools in towns for adolescents and adults, and normal schools for training teachers. For administrative purposes the country was to be divided into a number of school districts, in each of which the voters should elect a school committee. The whole national system was to be under the control of a Cabinet Minister. The cost would be met partly by “school

<sup>1</sup> *Hansard*, vol. xx, 142.

<sup>2</sup> *Commons Journal*, vol. lxxxviii, p. 615.

<sup>3</sup> *Hansard*, Third Series, vol. xx, col. 153.

pence," paid by parents who could afford them, but chiefly from taxation and from existing endowments, which were to be reapplied to this purpose. The education to be given was to be "as liberal as prudence would permit." In the schools of industry it would include not merely the three 'R's,' but also art, music, hygiene, natural history, civics, and training in some trade.

It is hardly surprising that so ambitious and so expensive a scheme did not find acceptance; but there was a long and keen debate on the Bill, which is some evidence of the growing popular interest in education. The Government showed that it was not altogether indifferent to the subject by voting in 1833 a sum of £20,000 for the erection of school-houses. There was some sort of precedent for this in that a vote had been made a few years previously for the building of churches. The resolution ran as follows: "That a sum, not exceeding twenty thousand pounds, be granted to His Majesty, to be issued in aid of Private Subscriptions for the Erection of School Houses, for the Education of the Children of the Poorer Classes in Great Britain, to the 31st day of March 1834; and that the said sum be issued and paid without any fee or other deduction whatsoever."<sup>1</sup> Though trivial in itself, this vote is of great significance as showing the future trend of English education. It was the first Government grant in aid of education.<sup>2</sup> That grant has been renewed and increased, and its application extended each year since 1833. By 1846 it amounted to £100,000; by 1859 to £836,920; in 1944 the State expenditure on education for England and Wales amounted to over £76,000,000. But the purpose of the original grant should be noted. It was issued "in aid of Private Subscriptions." In practice it

<sup>1</sup> *Commons Journal*, vol. lxxxviii, pp. 692-3.

<sup>2</sup> Unless one counts the parliamentary grant, part of which was to provide schoolmasters' salaries, which was voted in 1649. See De Montmorency, *State Intervention in English Education*, p. 104.

was paid over to the National Society and the British and Foreign School Society—two private institutions—to help them to build schools. It was decided that the local subscriptions for this purpose must be equivalent to at least half the grant made in any particular case, and the Society which benefited had to undertake the maintenance of any schools that were erected. Preference was given to applications from large cities and towns, and for schools with accommodation for not less than 400 pupils. Thus the grant tended to encourage the building of schools in comparatively well-to-do and populous areas, while the poorer, and therefore more necessitous, country districts were neglected. No other conditions were laid down. No standards for building were required; there was no inspection to see that the schools were adequately maintained after they had been built; no enquiries were made as to the efficacy of the instruction which was to be given in them. The scheme was obviously designed as a tentative one, and although the grant was renewed in succeeding years, the applications for assistance far exceeded the funds which were made available.

## Chapter VIII

### SECONDARY EDUCATION

Public Schools. Samuel Butler, B. H. Kennedy, and Thomas Arnold.

THE unsatisfactory state of the endowed public and grammar schools during the second half of the eighteenth century has already been described in Chapter II. It cannot be said that there was much improvement during the first three or four decades of the nineteenth century. According to Mr. Marvin, in his *Century of Hope*,<sup>1</sup> "it has been estimated that the condition of our public or higher schools was worse between 1750 and 1840 than at any time since King Alfred." Be that as it may, the narrow classical curriculum, the unsatisfactory housing and boarding conditions, and the low moral tone continued to be characteristic of them. But criticism was growing, and it came from many different quarters. Utilitarianism, as expounded by Jeremy Bentham and the two Mills, became popular in the early nineteenth century. Its aim was "the greatest happiness of the greatest number." It judged the rightness of an act, not by its motive, but by its result on the pleasure or pain of those affected by it.<sup>2</sup> The philosophic radicals who held this creed were intolerant of effete schools and colleges, which were upholding a traditional and apparently useless curriculum. The elder Mill, in his article on 'Education' in the *Encyclopædia Britannica* (1825), says: "An institution for *education*, which is hostile to progression, is the most preposterous, and vicious thing, which the mind of man can conceive."<sup>3</sup> Other criticisms came from the evangelicals. In spite of their limited outlook, the movement with which they were identified had (as Trevelyan says), "brought rectitude, un-

P. 204.

<sup>2</sup> See J. S. Mill, *Utilitarianism*, and especially p. 22 of the Routledge edition.

<sup>3</sup> James Mill on *Education* (ed. Cavenagh), p. 67.

selfishness and humanity into high places,"<sup>1</sup> and its influence was therefore exerted on those classes who sent their sons to the public schools. They were not likely to approve of the vices which boys were said to learn there, and which were stigmatised by Sydney Smith and many another writer after him. Again, there was growing up a class of factory-owners and manufacturers who had forged ahead and made their money in industry. Such parents were critical of the curriculum and the educational facilities which were offered to their children in the public and grammar schools. They wanted value for money here as in everything else, and—as has already been pointed out<sup>2</sup>—they often, for this reason, preferred a private school. In view, therefore, of their deficiencies and the criticisms that were levelled at them from so many sides, the public schools might well not have survived, had they not been reformed during the course of the nineteenth century. But they *were* reformed, and they *did* survive. That this happened is due largely to the efforts of two great headmasters—Samuel Butler of Shrewsbury and Thomas Arnold of Rugby.

Samuel Butler (1774–1839)—grandfather of the author of *Erewhon*—had been educated at Rugby and at St. John's College, Cambridge. He was elected to the headmastership of Shrewsbury in 1798, at the age of twenty-four. It was an ancient institution which had been refounded in the reign of Edward VI as a town grammar school. At the time when Butler arrived there were very few boys; but a new scheme had just come into force and the reconstituted governing body gave their headmaster valuable support. His chief reforms concerned teaching methods. He abolished what Carlyle stigmatised as 'gerund-grinding.' Boys had been set to learn by heart the rules of grammar and syntax from

*British History in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 54.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, p. 23.

antique text-books written in Latin; reference has already been made to the experience of D'Arcy Thompson at Christ's Hospital.<sup>1</sup> Every possible variation and exception were given, and the rules themselves were set out with incredible complexity. The compilers had forgotten that—as Quintilian<sup>2</sup> said—it is one of the virtues of a grammarian to be ignorant of some things. Butler at long last cleared all this away and required his boys to learn only what was really necessary. He promoted emulation and gave life to lessons by using a system of marks. He held regular examinations and based promotions on merit. Mathematics was taught to those who needed this subject. Benjamin Hall Kennedy, who was a pupil at Shrewsbury under Butler and became his successor there as headmaster, says: "History and geography were never neglected. . . . He was, of course, an excellent scholar and no ordinary teacher; but his crowning merit was the establishment of an emulative system, in which talent and industry always gained their just recognition and reward in good examinations. This it was that made his school so successful and so great. Added to this, he always advised and recommended private reading."<sup>3</sup> Another of Butler's reforms was to give a certain share of authority to some of the senior boys—"prepostors,"<sup>4</sup> as they were called. Thus he anticipated Arnold, who is generally credited with the introduction of the prefect system into the modern public school. It was all part of his general policy to make boys "in intellectual as well as in moral matters *self-reliant*." His methods were justified by their results. Shrewsbury boys swept the board in the scholarship and honours examinations at Oxford and Cambridge. The

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 40.

<sup>2</sup> "Mihi inter virtutes grammatici habebitur aliqua nescire." Quintilian, *Inst. Or.*, chap. viii, § 21.

<sup>3</sup> Letter quoted in *Life and Letters of Samuel Butler*, vol. i, p. 252.

<sup>4</sup> On Butler's spelling of this word see *Life and Letters of Samuel Butler*, vol. i, p. 206.

school's reputation grew rapidly and the numbers greatly increased. In 1842, three years after Butler's death, the *Quarterly Review* said of him: "If the silent but most practical reformation which has been at work in our public schools for many years ever attracts the notice it deserves, then the time will come when men will take an interest in tracing the steps of the improvement; and they will hardly fail to give honour due to that scholar who first set the example in remodelling our public education, and gave a stimulus which is now acting on almost all the public schools in the country."

Butler's methods were carried on by his successor, Benjamin Hall Kennedy (1804-1889), an old Salopian, who was headmaster of Shrewsbury from 1836 to 1866. He had won the Porson Prize at Cambridge while still a boy at school, and during his university career he carried off practically every distinction in Classics that was open to him. As a schoolmaster, therefore, he naturally laid great stress on this subject, and he was the author of the *Public School Latin Primer*, which had a long career, though it did not escape criticism as being too detailed. None the less, Kennedy introduced mathematics and French as subjects in the ordinary curriculum. He (unlike Butler<sup>1</sup>) encouraged organised games and started a school choir. In passing, it is interesting to notice that Kennedy had a dispute with the burgesses of Shrewsbury, which illustrates a point to which reference has already been made.<sup>2</sup> They contended that the term *libera schola grammaticalis*, as used in the original charter of Edward VI, meant literally a 'free grammar school,' available without fee to the sons of townsfolk. Kennedy issued a pamphlet in which he expressed his views on this point. "All who are well read in the terminology of mediæval law," he says, "know that this term means a

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 21.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, pp. 15-16.



royally chartered school, a school free from all superiority, save that of the Crown." The quarrel went on for some time, but it was finally settled in Kennedy's favour by the Public Schools Commission in 1862.<sup>1</sup>

There is little doubt that, in his reforms of Shrewsbury School, Kennedy was to some extent influenced by his more famous contemporary Arnold, of whom something must now be said. Thomas Arnold (1795-1842) had a distinguished career at Winchester, and thence went up to Corpus Christi College, Oxford. He was elected a fellow of Oriel at the age of twenty-one. This college had become the headquarters of a group of keen and critical scholars, who were known as 'noetics.' These "were a select body somewhat inclined to mutual admiration, producing little but freely criticising everything; they applied an unsparing logic to received opinions, especially those concerning religious faith, but their strength lay rather in drawing inferences and refuting fallacies than in examining and settling the premises from which their syllogisms were deduced."<sup>2</sup> Nurtured in such an atmosphere, Arnold was inclined to be critical and intolerant of mere tradition. For him the Classics were not simply material for linguistic exercises, but a stimulus to ethical, philosophical, and political thinking. Yet he was intensely religious. He was ordained in 1818, though he never did any parochial work. His views were extremely Protestant, and he was always an opponent of Tractarianism. In 1819 he left Oxford and settled at Laleham, near Staines, where he began to take in private pupils and coach them for entrance to the Universities. About this time also he married. He and his wife seem to have been successful and happy in their work. "The most remarkable thing which struck me at once on joining the Laleham circle was, the wonder-

<sup>1</sup> On this whole subject see F. D. How, *Six Great Schoolmasters*, pp. 111-13.

<sup>2</sup> Brodrick, *History of the University of Oxford*, chap. xviii. See also Mark Pattison, *Memoirs*, pp. 79-80.

ful healthiness of tone and feeling which prevailed in it. . . . Dr. Arnold's great power as a private tutor resided in this, that he gave such an intense earnestness to life. . . . In the details of daily business, the quantity of time that he devoted to his pupils was very remarkable. Lessons began at seven, and with the interval of breakfast lasted till nearly three; then he would walk with his pupils and dine at half-past five. At seven he usually had some lesson in hand; and it was only when we were all gathered up in the drawing-room after tea, amidst young men on all sides of him, that he would commence work for himself, in writing his sermons or Roman History."<sup>1</sup>

In 1827 the headmastership of Rugby School became vacant, and Arnold offered himself as a candidate for the post. In a testimonial from Dr. Hawkins, the Provost of Oriel, it was stated that if Mr. Arnold were elected to the headmastership of Rugby, he would change the face of education all through the public schools of England. Prophecies made in testimonials are not always justified by events; but the future proved that in this case, at least, Dr. Hawkins was right. Arnold was elected and entered upon his duties in August 1828. At the time of his arrival Rugby was certainly in no worse a condition than many of the English public schools, and in some respects it was probably better than most. Under the rule of his predecessor, Dr. Wooll, the school buildings had been rebuilt and the accommodation had been greatly improved. The numbers had increased, though they had fallen off latterly, probably owing to a raising of the school fees in 1813. The teaching and boarding arrangements had been improved, and a pension scheme had been started for the benefit of the assistant masters.<sup>2</sup> The long list of distinguished Rugbeians who

<sup>1</sup> Bonamy Price in Stanley, *Life of Thomas Arnold*, p. 39.

<sup>2</sup> In 1811 there were nine assistant masters for 381 boys. Contrast conditions at Eton in 1834—see *supra*, p. 20.

were members of the school during Wooll's headmastership is some proof that the school was far from inefficient. But, as W. H. D. Rouse says: "The system as Arnold found it at Rugby was not unlike to the administration of a conquered state. The Headmaster was an autocrat, dispensing punishments with no unsparing hand. He and his colleagues alike were looked on as the natural enemies of boyhood, set over them by a mysterious dispensation of Providence to interfere with personal liberty and enjoyment. To these rulers the boys rendered a grudging obedience, which ceased when it ceased to be enforced. They had their own organisation, by which the weaker were slaves of the stronger; and their own code of honour, mercilessly strict among themselves, but lax towards their masters. A lie told to a schoolfellow was a very different thing from a lie told to the master. Differences between themselves were settled by an appeal to brute force, not only amongst the younger, where it was natural, but amongst older boys already on the verge of manhood. Ideals of conduct were otherwise low, and intemperate indulgence of various kinds was not condemned by public opinion."<sup>1</sup> Thus it was not so much in the externals as in the whole tone and spirit and outlook of the school that Arnold recognised that reformation was needed. His chief claim to greatness lies in the fact that he effected this reformation, and that his ideas and ideals were widely accepted and imitated.

For Arnold education had a twofold basis—religion and a liberal culture. The school chapel gave him an opportunity of influencing the whole school, and he used it to the full.<sup>2</sup> On his appointment as headmaster, he got himself also made school chaplain, for he felt it essential that the head should stand in a pastoral relationship to his boys. He also

<sup>1</sup> Rouse, *A History of Rugby School*, p. 224.

<sup>2</sup> See his 'Selected Sermons preached in Rugby Chapel,' in Findlay, *Arnold of Rugby*, pp. 122-97.

exerted enormous influence on the school by means of his Sixth Form, whom he treated as 'gentlemen.' Stanley, his biographer and one of his old pupils, says: "There grew up a general feeling that it was a shame to tell Arnold a lie—he always believes one."<sup>1</sup> But if his trust proved to be misplaced, he took no further risks; and any offender whose influence he felt to be detrimental to the school he ruthlessly expelled. Much of the improvement in tone was due, not merely to Arnold's personal influence and direct action, but also to better organisation. He introduced separate studies, smaller dormitories, and more adequate supervision. This was a real gain. Reference has already been made to conditions in Long Chamber at Eton when Edward Thring was a pupil there from 1833 to 1841.<sup>2</sup> "After 8.0 o'clock at night," he says, "no prying eye came near till the following morning; no one lived in the same building; cries of joy and pain were equally unheard; excepting a code of laws of their own, there was no help or redress for anyone." Even at Rugby and in the days of Arnold such practices as tossing in blankets and roasting of small boys before an open fire were not unknown—as readers of *Tom Brown's Schooldays* will remember. But Arnold never acquiesced in such evils as these, and it was in order to deal with them that he developed the prefect system, the origin of which is so often associated particularly with him and with Rugby. In an article which he contributed to the *Quarterly Journal of Education* he speaks of "the power given by the supreme authorities of the school to the Sixth Form, to be exercised by them over the lower boys, for the sake of securing a regular government amongst the boys themselves, and avoiding the evils of anarchy; in other words, of the lawless tyranny of physical strength."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Stanley, *Life of Thomas Arnold*, p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, p. 22.

<sup>3</sup> *Quarterly Journal of Education*, vol. ix, pp. 286-7.

Arnold also reformed the school curriculum. He believed in methods of instruction which would stimulate self-activity and train the power of self-expression, and which at the same time would be adjusted to the needs of individual pupils. As an ex-fellow of Oriel, and a 'noetic,' he believed strongly in the educational value of the Classics, but he took no traditional or conventional view as to the method of teaching them. One of his biographers, Sir Joshua Fitch, says of him: "In his teaching of languages he was the first Englishman who drew attention in our public schools to the historical, political, and philosophical value of philology and of the ancient writers, as distinguished from the mere verbal criticism and elegant scholarship of the preceding century."<sup>1</sup> Arnold also advocated the claims of history as a school subject and was, in fact, the first modern teacher of it. It was a branch of study which had always interested him. While still at Laleham he had written a series of articles on Roman History for an encyclopædia, and he later published a work on the same topic in three volumes. From 1841 to 1842 he was professor of Modern History at Oxford, holding this office in conjunction with his headmastership. To Arnold, history is the record of God's dealings with man.<sup>2</sup> Human progress is divinely directed. The Jews, the Greeks, and the Romans were the three chosen people of ancient times, and their history converges on that of Christianity. The State is the appointed means of drawing men nearer to God. Aristotle—whom Arnold greatly admired—had said that man is a 'political animal'; thus individual perfection and the perfection of society go hand in hand. Men's relations to God underlie and explain their association in the Church; their relations to one another underlie and explain their association in the State. Thus the more closely Church

<sup>1</sup> Fitch, *Arnold of Rugby*, p. 78.

Arnold was a great admirer of Vico. See Lionel Trilling, *Matthew Arnold*, p. 51.

and State are associated, the more nearly will human perfection be attained. Arnold stands for "the great principle that Christianity should be the base of all public education in this country." It was for this reason that in 1838 he resigned from the Senate of the University of London, when it was proposed to institute a voluntary examination in theology, which, he felt, showed that Christianity was regarded as "no essential part of one system, but merely a branch of knowledge, which any man might pursue if he liked, but which he might also, if he liked, wholly neglect, without forfeiting his claim, according to our estimate, to the title of a completely educated man."<sup>1</sup>

Arnold was fortunate in his 'press,' for he has been 'written up' in three works which spread his fame far and wide—Stanley's *Life*, *Tom Brown's Schooldays*, and his son Matthew Arnold's poem *Rugby Chapel*. He was a great figure and a dominating personality; and such men tend to be idealised by their admirers. It has become something of a fashion in recent years to 'debunk' the heroic figures of an earlier age, and Arnold has not escaped the process. In Mr. Lytton Strachey's *Eminent Victorians*, he reappears as a tedious prig; and the former practice of ascribing every possible public-school reform to him has not altogether unjustly been termed the 'Arnold myth.' It is certainly true that some of the credit which is often given too exclusively to him ought to be shared with others. Reference has already been made to the important work of Butler and Kennedy; much also was done by other headmasters, many of them old pupils of Butler or Arnold. There resulted from this a movement to found new and more progressive schools during the forties and fifties of last century; examples are Cheltenham (1841), Marlborough (1843), Rossall (1844), and Wellington (1853).

<sup>1</sup> Letter to the Earl of Burlington, in Stanley, *Life of Arnold*, chap. viii. p. 485.

It may well be that Stanley has exaggerated Arnold's single-handedness in the moral reform of the public schools and the extent of his personal influence on his pupils. But it is still true that Arnold's greatness lies in the fact that he saved the English public-school system and gave it a place in the esteem of the people of this country which it has not yet lost—and that in spite of continued criticism, much of which may be not wholly undeserved. Arnold carried out his reforms by the force of his own vigorous moral personality. His own high reputation increased the prestige of other headmasters and that of the profession generally; and this strengthened the position and independence of the endowed schools against State interference. Sir Michael Sadler says that if it had not been for Arnold, it is probable that English higher secondary education would have passed more or less completely under the control of the State. Again—as has been indicated—Arnold's influence was exerted through members of his staff and old pupils who became headmasters of many of these public and endowed schools. He was very careful to appoint as his assistants men whom he could trust to carry out his ideals. "I want," he says, "a man who is a Christian and a gentleman, an active man, and one who has common sense, and understands boys. I do not so much care about scholarship, as he will have under him the lowest forms in the school; but yet, on second thoughts, I do care about it very much, because his pupils may be in the highest forms; and besides, I think that even the elements are best taught by a man who has a thorough knowledge of the matter. However, if one must give way, I prefer activity of mind and an interest in his work, to high scholarship: for the one may be acquired far more easily than the other."<sup>1</sup> Men of this type, trained and inspired by him, spread his ideas, not

<sup>1</sup> See Stanley, *Life of Arnold*, chap. iii, p. 93.

only in the public boarding schools, but in the big day schools like Manchester Grammar School and St. Paul's. The fact that Arnold was a liberal evangelical churchman and keen on inter-denominational relations strengthened the school of thought which favoured unsectarian Christian teaching as a basis for religious instruction in schools attended by pupils drawn from a variety of religious bodies. Thus nonconformist parents were not unwilling to send their boys to what were nominally Church of England schools. This helped to keep the 'religious difficulty'—which was already complicating the development of our elementary education—out of the secondary schools. Professor Archer also points out that the example of Arnold helped to perpetuate the custom of preferring clergymen as headmasters of public and grammar schools—a custom which lingered on into the twentieth century and is not even yet extinct.



## Chapter IX

### UNIVERSITY EDUCATION

Progress of Reform at Oxford and Cambridge. The University of London.

EDUCATIONAL reform at Oxford and Cambridge proceeded slowly during the first part of the nineteenth century. *The Adventures of Mr. Verdant Green*, which was first published in 1853, is admittedly a skit on the university life of the time, but it mirrors very faithfully the lack of serious purpose and of intellectual interests, the extravagance and the dissipation which characterised the career of too many undergraduates. When the *Edinburgh Review* attacked this state of things, the Universities found a champion in Copleston, who was Dr. Hawkins's predecessor as Provost of Oriel and was himself something of a reformer. Yet this is what Professor Archer says of him: "It is hard to realise that a man who was regarded by his contemporaries as among the ablest Oxonians of his day both intellectually and practically should, in carrying on a discussion, be so completely unable to distinguish the wood for the trees. He spends more time in defending himself from a charge of a small slip in his Greek than in meeting serious attacks on the Oxford system; he indulges in trivial attacks on the opponent's attorney; and he tediously replies to the charges sentence by sentence when a few decisive thrusts might have given him the victory."<sup>1</sup> Yet there was some real improvement from within, chiefly in the widening of the curriculum, and the tightening-up of the examination system. Reference has already been made to the Oxford 'Public Examination Statute' of 1800.<sup>2</sup> The separation of the classical and mathematical honours schools, which made possible the achievement of a 'double first,' dates from 1807. 'Moderations'—a kind of intermediate examination at either a pass

<sup>1</sup> Archer, *Secondary Education in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 36.    <sup>2</sup> See *supra*, p. 31.

or honours standard—was not introduced until 1850; while the final honours schools of natural science, and law and history (afterwards separated), date from 1852. The Oxford Museum, due largely to Dr. Acland, was founded in 1855. At Cambridge, up to 1824 there was only one tripos, which consisted almost entirely of mathematical subjects. In that year a second tripos in Classics was established, but as it was open only to those who had already taken honours in the mathematical tripos its effectiveness was limited. This regulation was not repealed until 1850. Meanwhile, in 1848, two new triposes had been instituted—one in moral sciences, and the other in natural sciences. Thus it was practically the middle of the century before the modern examination system was really under way at either University. At Oxford the chief interest continued to be the Classics—or rather ‘literæ humaniores’; at Cambridge it was mathematics.

But the great majority of college tutors and undergraduates were little affected by the changes which were slowly taking place. The college societies formed close oligarchies, and most of the teaching was done inside their walls. The lectures given by college tutors were little more than construing classes, like a translation lesson with a Classical Sixth Form in a public school. An intelligent and well-prepared undergraduate, when he came into residence, often found that he had covered much of the work already; and that encouraged idleness. Moreover, it was much more usual to take a pass degree than an honours school or a tripos—the reverse of the present custom at Oxford and Cambridge; and there was little inducement to tempt the student to leave the beaten track. At Oxford, as late as 1850, out of some 1,500 or 1,600 undergraduates, the average annual attendance at the modern history course was eight; at botany, six; at Arabic, Anglo-Saxon, Sanskrit, and medicine, none.

Apart from the changes in university organisation and routine, there were at work some less obvious forces, which none the less had considerable effect. The 'first Oriel school'—the noetics to which Arnold belonged—was succeeded by a very different 'second Oriel School' from which sprang the religious revival in the Church of England known as Tractarianism or the Oxford Movement. This began about 1833. In spite of the bickering and bitterness to which it gave rise in its early days, it did much to transform and transfigure the English Church. So far as education was concerned, it tended to strengthen the view that this is the duty of the Church. Thus its supporters were found on the side of the voluntary system and were opposed to the State-controlled school. The movement has therefore been criticised as reactionary and narrow in intellectual outlook; but at any rate it helped to awaken the Universities to a higher standard of personal behaviour and a greater sense of responsibility. Moreover, the very reactionary elements and Romeward tendencies in the Oxford Movement themselves stimulated a liberal reaction in the Universities which was in sympathy with the growing demands for reform from outside.

It remains true that Oxford and Cambridge, although they were slowly beginning to move and contained progressive elements, on the whole continued to be conservative and aristocratic. They were closely associated with the Established Church; they were mainly interested in Classics, theology, and theoretical mathematics, which were frankly not utilitarian, but based their claims to value on taste or culture or religion. The two Universities were also very expensive. The annual cost of sending a boy to Oxford or Cambridge in the 1830's was estimated at £200 to £250—which represented a good deal more than it does today. So the appeal of the ancient Universities was mainly to the

wealthy and upper classes, and no dissenter could enjoy their full privileges. On the other hand, there was a large and dissatisfied opposition to such a state of things. It included Liberals, nonconformists, Jews, Roman Catholics, secularists, men who were much more interested in the new science than in the old 'humanities,' and the successful manufacturers and business magnates who believed in a 'useful' rather than a traditional, and so-called 'cultural,' education. And so the democratic and utilitarian tendencies of the day allied themselves with the scientific and secularist movements in providing an entirely new institution of general and vocational higher education for the benefit of those to whom Oxford and Cambridge were closed by reason of religious tests or of expense or of unsuitability.

In *The Times* of February 9th, 1825, there appeared a letter addressed to Henry Brougham and written by the poet Thomas Campbell. The author pleaded for the establishment of a "great London University" designed primarily to provide education for the "middling rich," "the small, comfortable, able, trading fortunes." Campbell had already visited Bonn and Berlin, and he doubtless had the non-residential German university in mind; he had also discussed the matter with the philosopher David Hume, who had been educated in one of the Scottish universities, which were run on similar lines. As a result of this letter, a meeting, presided over by the Lord Mayor, was held at the London Tavern. A prospectus was issued and an appeal launched. The outcome of this was the opening of a college in Gower Street in 1828. It was a proprietary institution, run by shareholders as a joint-stock company. Among the Whigs and Radicals who sponsored the new college were the utilitarian philosophers Jeremy Bentham<sup>1</sup> and James Mill,

<sup>1</sup> Bentham's skeleton is still kept in a case in the library at University College Gower Street. It was removed to a place of safety during the war.

the statesman Brougham, the educationist Birkbeck, the philosopher Hume, and the historian George Grote. The 'University of London' was to be an undenominational teaching institution; there were no tests and theology was to be kept out of the curriculum. Arnold referred to it as "that godless institution in Gower Street."<sup>1</sup> The tendency of the embryo 'university' was towards modern studies and science. Its curriculum embraced languages, mathematics, physics, mental and moral science, law, history, political economy. Medicine was also an important subject from the beginning, and a hospital, attached to the college, was opened in 1834. The annual fees in the 'university' were low—£25 to £30 a year, a mere fraction of the cost of a course at Oxford or Cambridge. The founding of London University was an educational event of the first importance, though there were not many at the time who realised it. There were frequent jibes at Brougham and his 'Cockney College,' and it was nicknamed 'Stinkomalee' by Theodore Hook, because it was built on the site of a rubbish dump; but by 1830 it had already over five hundred students, the majority of whom were reading medicine.

The success of the institution was due partly to the fact that it was non-residential and therefore cheap, and partly to its provision of subjects which were not taught, or inefficiently taught, at Oxford and Cambridge, but for which there was a real and growing demand. But its complete secularisation was a stumbling-block not only to members of the Church of England like Arnold, but to all who regarded religion as an essential constituent—or indeed, the basis—of education at all stages. It was therefore felt that a counterblast must be made, and this time the moving spirit was Dr. D'Oyly, a distinguished Cambridge man, and at the time Rector of Lambeth. A meeting was held on

<sup>1</sup>See also *supra*, p. 93.

June 21st, 1828. The Prime Minister, the Duke of Wellington, was in the chair, and the Archbishops of Canterbury and York were among the galaxy of prelates on the platform. The following resolution was passed: "That it is the opinion of this meeting that a college for general education be founded in the metropolis, in which, while the various branches of literature and science are made the subjects of instruction, it shall be an essential part of the system to imbue the minds of youth with a knowledge of the doctrines and duties of Christianity as inculcated by the United Church of England and Ireland."<sup>1</sup> Subscriptions flowed in, and a long and narrow site end-on to the Strand, next to Somerset House, was secured. Here a building was erected, and in 1831 King's College, London, armed with a royal charter and with the Archbishop of Canterbury as 'visitor,' was opened. It included a higher department in which were taught "religion and morals, classical literature, mathematics, natural and experimental philosophy, chemistry, parts of natural history, logic, English literature and composition, the principles of commerce and general history. To these will be added instruction in modern foreign languages, and in subjects connected with particular professions, as medicine and surgery, jurisprudence, etc."<sup>2</sup> There was also a lower department which consisted of "a school for the reception of day scholars," which, though totally distinct from the higher department, afforded an education preparatory to it.<sup>3</sup> The institution had a rather slow start. In the session 1831-2 there were 114 full-time

<sup>1</sup> See Hearnshaw, *Centenary History of King's College, London*, p. 41.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> The 'London University' in Gower Street had also started a junior school. This afterwards became known as 'University College School,' and it occupied the south wing of the College until it was moved out in 1907 to new buildings at Hampstead. Hearnshaw (*op. cit.*, p. 80) says that these two schools were models "of a new type of secondary school destined to rise to great importance during the nineteenth century—a type intermediate between the great residential public schools and the old local grammar schools."

students, and 162 boys in the school. By 1836-7 these numbers had risen to 183 and 380 respectively. But there followed a period of expansion, and by 1843-4 there were 293 full-time students and 465 boys.

Meanwhile the so-called 'University of London' was a university in name only, for it had not yet—like King's College—been incorporated, and neither of them had power to grant degrees. A petition was preferred in 1830, and the grant of incorporation was made in the following year; but there was a good deal of opposition to the proposal that this institution should be allowed to grant degrees—especially on the part of Oxford and Cambridge. The question was raised both in the House of Commons and the House of Lords. There were petitions and counter-petitions to the Privy Council. At last, in 1836, a compromise was reached. The original Gower Street college was renamed University College, London—a title which it still retains. A new body, the University of London, was chartered with powers to grant degrees in arts, laws, and medicine; and students who had taken courses at either University College or King's College could be admitted as candidates. Provision was made for other institutions to be allowed subsequently to submit candidates if they were of sufficient status. The Senate of the newly formed University included Henry Brougham, Michael Faraday, and Thomas Arnold. The last-named, as we have seen, resigned in 1838, because he could not induce the University to impose an examination in Scripture, on Christian but not sectarian lines, for all its candidates for degrees—an equivalent, apparently, of what in Oxford used to be called the First Public Examination in Holy Scripture. It was owing to the example of London that the education of the modern non-residential universities and university colleges in this country, founded during the nineteenth century, have been given their distinctive neutral,

non-sectarian character. It had been intended originally to make London a teaching University; but in the event the actual teaching was done by the colleges—University College and King's College in particular. The Senate had no power to inspect affiliated colleges or to enquire into methods of teaching. Its only means of control was through its degree examinations. As time went on, other institutions were affiliated to the University. Many were scattered all over the country, and some of them were little more than secondary schools, so that affiliation ceased to have any real significance. Finally, by a charter of 1858, the Senate was empowered to dispense with 'certificates of studentship'—i.e. certificates showing that candidates for degrees had attended a course of study at an affiliated college; the only exception was in the case of medical students. Thus, with this exception, the University became an examining body pure and simple, admitting all comers to its examinations without any enquiry as to their training or preparation. The system of 'external degrees' was in full swing.



## *Chapter X*

### THE BEGINNINGS OF TECHNICAL AND SCIENTIFIC EDUCATION

Birkbeck and the Mechanics' Institutes. Scientific Progress and the Royal Institution. Whewell.

HIGHER education during the eighteenth century had been associated almost entirely with the Universities. They were to a large extent the preserves of a certain class of society, and those who passed through them tended to enter one of a small number of callings—chiefly the Church (and with it teaching in the grammar and public schools), the law, public life, the life of a country gentleman. But the social developments of the latter part of the century had created new demands and stimulated new attitudes towards the fulfilling of them. The Industrial Revolution and the invention of steam machinery fostered an interest in mechanical subjects: mathematics, science, drawing, and engineering took on a new importance. At the same time the doctrines of the French Revolution were bound sooner or later to lead to a demand by the working classes for wider educational opportunities. There were endless new posts to be filled in industry, and only those who had some technical knowledge were qualified to fill them. Thus even the people who did not approve of social and political equality—e.g. the opponents of the movement which led to the Reform Bill of 1832—did not necessarily object to giving the workers some specialised technical education which would make them more effective in industry. To admit them to this would not imply any kind of competition with the Universities, or with secondary schools, because neither of them were in the least interested in technical subjects. It was realised that, even if workmen were given instruction beyond the modicum afforded by the

elementary schools of the day, it would but serve to improve their labour and their productiveness in industry; and this would be of benefit to the employer. They would not be educated "above their class," because their education would not be of the kind to enable them to climb out of that state of life into which it had pleased God to call them, but would merely enable them to do their duty in that state of life more efficiently.

It was in this way that higher education for the working classes, and with it technical education, were born in this country. It was at an epoch when a great advance was being made in many branches of natural science, and when the results of this advance were being applied in industry. It was therefore to be expected that the higher instruction given to workers should be mainly concerned at first with science. As early as 1760 a professor at Glasgow, named Anderson, had begun to hold evening classes in science, which working men were encouraged to attend. In his will he left an endowment for a chair of natural philosophy at the University. Its first occupant was George Birkbeck (1776-1841), who held a degree in medicine. When he started his lectures in 1799 he found it necessary to have a good deal of apparatus, and while this was being made under his instructions he became acquainted with a number of Glasgow artisans. He found them so intelligent and so eager to learn that he resolved to start a course of lectures and experiments in mechanics "solely for persons engaged in the practical exercise of the mechanical arts, men whose situation in early life has precluded the possibility of acquiring even the smallest portion of scientific knowledge." The lectures proved a great success. After Birkbeck removed to London in 1804, the lectures were continued by the next occupant of the chair; and finally, in 1823, the members of the class organised it into a 'Mechanics' Insti-

tute.' Its purpose was defined as "instructing artisans in the scientific principles of arts and manufactures."<sup>1</sup>

The movement soon spread. Birkbeck, who was now a practising physician in London, took the lead in the establishment of a similar institute there (1823). He lent a large sum for building a lecture-room, and was elected first president of the institute. The movement was also fostered by a periodical called *The Mechanic's Magazine*. In 1824 alone 16,000 copies of it were sold. Another supporter was Brougham. Although his Parish Schools Bill had recently been withdrawn (1820), he had not yet lost his enthusiasm for popular education. It was shown in a pamphlet called *Practical Observations on the Education of the People* (1825).<sup>2</sup> It went through twenty editions in a year—a striking evidence of the interest in popular education taken by liberal opinion in the 1820's. His opponents talked about the 'education-mad party,' of which he was the leader, and of the 'steam-intellect society' which he was supposed to advocate. In his pamphlet Brougham says: "I begin by assuming that there is no class in the community so entirely occupied with labour as not to have an hour or two every other day at least to bestow upon the pleasure and improvement to be derived from reading—or so poor as not to have the means of contributing something towards purchasing this justification, the enjoyment of which, beside the present amusement, is the surest way to raise our character and better our condition." This sounds as if Brougham were advocating popular education, and not merely technical instruction for artisans. But the majority of his Whig followers were not really interested in the education of the lowest classes; they were too much obsessed with the virtues of individualism and the rather cold and theoretical

<sup>1</sup> See Delisle Burns, *A Short History of Birkbeck College*, chap. i.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, pp. 79–80.

utilitarianism of the times. In any case, Brougham's assumption was scarcely justifiable; most factory workers and agricultural labourers and miners had neither leisure nor surplus wages to devote even for "an hour or two every other day" to the "pleasure and enjoyment to be derived from reading." The new artisans—the engineers and mechanics—were the one class among the workers who were likely to gain more than they lost by the Industrial Revolution, and to whom knowledge (i.e. scientific knowledge) would be of daily use. Many of these men worked their way up and eventually came to the forefront in mechanical invention. George Stephenson, son of a colliery fireman, was one of them.

Mechanics' institutes soon sprang up in many parts of the country. They were supported by subscriptions from the members and by donations from sympathisers. By 1850 there were 610 institutions, with 102,000 members.<sup>1</sup> They were naturally most popular and numerous in the manufacturing districts, such as London, Lancashire, and Yorkshire; but there were a few successful institutes also in such rural centres as Lewes, Basingstoke, Chichester, and Lincoln. Each institute usually included a library, reading-room, and museum of models and apparatus. Lectures were provided on mathematics and its applications, and on natural and experimental science and drawing. Sometimes literary subjects, such as English and foreign languages, were included. Travelling lecturers and circulating boxes of books helped to keep the smaller institutes in touch with one another.

The mechanics' institutes played an important part in English education, and yet they were only partially successful. By 1850 two changes had become noticeable. Their membership consisted more of clerks and apprentices and middle-class people than of working men, for whose

<sup>1</sup> See tables in Hudson, *History of Adult Education* (1850), pp. 222–36.

benefit they had been founded;<sup>1</sup> and, as a corollary of this, their syllabuses had tended to change. There was less purely technical instruction and more recreational activities and popular lectures. Discussions, debates, and even social functions, such as dances, tended to take the place of *ad hoc* courses designed to help artisans. There were several reasons for this change. The artisans and working classes had not yet received an elementary education, which would form an adequate foundation on which to build a superstructure of technical education. Reference has already been made to the meagre limits of education provided by the monitorial schools and other elementary schools. It must also be remembered that some of the children of the poor hardly went to school at all and that the average length of school life was in any case only one and a half or two years. Moreover—as Adamson points out—a great obstacle to the spread of knowledge at this period was the high cost of newspapers, owing to the Government duty; from 1819 to 1836 there was a stamp-duty of 4*d.* a copy. In a Poor Law Commissioners' Report of 1834 there occurs this passage: "The dearness of newspapers in this country is an insurmountable obstacle to the education of the poor. I could name twenty villages within a circuit of a few miles in which a newspaper is never seen from one year's end to another."<sup>2</sup> Again, the fees for membership and classes in mechanics' institutes tended to be too high for those for whom they were originally designed. At the London Mechanics' Institute in 1823 the annual subscription was fixed at £1, and this seems to have been a fairly usual charge. In 1826 1,477 workmen paid this fee at the London Institute; but it would be a rather high fee for people of that type

<sup>1</sup> Cf. "The Institution (Birkbeck) has for some years been little more than an association of shop-keepers and their apprentices, law copyists and attorney's clerks." Hudson, *History of Adult Education*, p. 52. See also Preface, p. vii.

<sup>2</sup> Quoted by Adamson. See *English Education*, 1789-1902, pp. 41-2.

even today, and it must have been much more onerous in the Corn Law days, after the Napoleonic Wars, when wages generally were low. Thus the mechanics' institutes tended to decline in importance and to change in character. They were the forerunners of the atheneums, mutual improvement societies, clubs, and reading-rooms which were popular in mid-Victorian days. But some of them retained much of their original character and were stimulated into new life by the development of technical education during the second half of the nineteenth century. For example, the London Mechanics' Institution was the forerunner of the present Birkbeck College, which caters for evening students but is a constituent part of the University of London. In the broadest sense, the mechanics' institutes have laid the foundation for the development of our modern technical schools and colleges.

It has already been pointed out that the latter years of the eighteenth and early part of the nineteenth centuries were a time of great progress in science. Chemistry, for example, had been a subject of particular interest to the philosophical scientists of eighteenth-century France; Lavoisier's work was done mainly between 1770 and 1794. Interest in this subject had spread rapidly since Priestley's discovery of oxygen in 1774. The tradition was carried on in the next two generations by Sir Humphry Davy and Michael Faraday. To them also—and especially to Faraday—are due the researches into magnetism and induction which laid the basis for subsequent improvements in the application of electricity. The scientists of those times were to a much less degree specialists than they are today. Geology was another subject which, as a science, dates mainly from this period. William Buckland (1784-1856), who became the first professor of geology at Oxford in 1819, did not succeed in allaying the alarm of heresy-hunters by his

attempts to reconcile his researches on fossils with the cosmogony of Genesis. Even more important was the work of his pupil, Sir Charles Lyell (1797-1875), who was professor of geology at King's College, London, from 1831 to 1833, and who published about the same time a *Principles of Geology*, which remained a standard work on the subject throughout the nineteenth century.

Scientific discoveries, however, and the application of them to industry did not necessarily mean that they were, or could be, included in the school curriculum. The very range and diversity of the new subjects provided one of the chief obstacles. If a selection was to be made, what principles were to govern it? We are facing a similar problem today; biology has been admitted into many schools, but now geology and astronomy are claiming a place in an already overloaded curriculum. Again, the teaching even of elementary science requires some modicum of apparatus, and this was not always easy to obtain or construct. Thus those who most ardently advocated the teaching of science in schools were not always agreed either as to what the term *science* should include, or how the subject should be taught. Even as late as 1862 a Royal Commission, which was visiting the public schools, found that Rugby alone was making any serious attempt to teach natural science. Even there it had only just started; a few months previously it had set up a science laboratory and put it in the charge of a young and enthusiastic master, J. M. Wilson, who had recently come down from Cambridge, where he had been senior wrangler. But more than thirty years before this something had been done to popularise scientific instruction among the people. In 1800 the Royal Institution had been founded "for diffusing the knowledge and facilitating the general introduction of useful mechanical inventions and improvements; and for teaching by courses of philosophical

lectures and experiments the application of science to the common purposes of life." This aim links up on the one side with the contemporary development of scientific research and with the mechanics' institute movement on the other. Sir Humphry Davy had been professor of chemistry at the Royal Institution, and he was succeeded by Michael Faraday. In addition to his research work and his lectures to adults, Faraday started in 1827 courses of Christmas lectures for juveniles, and he continued these until 1862. Their scope can be gathered from the collections of lectures which have been published under the titles *The Chemical History of a Candle* and *On the Various Forces of Matter*. Thus the Royal Institution did much to promote an interest in science, especially among such young people as would be attending the type of school where Classics was the staple of the curriculum, and where there was little or no instruction in any kind of science.

As to the Universities, as has been said, the classical and abstract mathematical tradition was very strong in them. There were doubtless criticisms that their courses were not sufficiently 'practical'; but the university attitude, when it was explicitly thought out, was that they should teach people to *think*, and that the practical applications of mathematics and science were in no way part of their business. This view is taken by Whewell (1794-1866), one of the greatest mathematicians of the nineteenth century, Cambridge professor of mineralogy and a writer on astronomical subjects. He is prepared to admit science to the university course and encourage students to do research work, if they have the ability and necessary preliminary training; but he says: "habits of thought must be *formed* among other subjects"<sup>1</sup>—i.e. there must be a basic course in subjects which give a logical discipline to the mind. Among these he would in-

<sup>1</sup> Whewell, *On the Principles of English University Education*, p. 42.



clude the Classics. "Greek and Latin," he says, "are peculiar and indispensable elements of a liberal education."<sup>1</sup> But Classics alone is not enough; it must be combined in university teaching with mathematical subjects because "we are, in that study, concerned with long trains of reasoning in which each link hangs from all the preceding."<sup>2</sup> So in his *Of a Liberal Education in General*, published in 1845, he makes various recommendations: school mathematics should be taught by practical methods; applied mathematics (mechanics and hydrostatics) should form part of the ordinary university course; the history of science should be studied so that the student may learn the difficulties which scientific investigators have encountered in their researches and how they have overcome them; there should be optional courses for more advanced students in order to stimulate them to research, and a post-graduate tripos in science should be introduced for the benefit of such students. The last of these recommendations was put into effect by the institution, in 1848, of the Cambridge Natural Science Tripos, which at first was open only to those who had already graduated. The Oxford Honours School of Natural Science dates from 1853, and was a degree course. At the University of London, largely owing to the efforts of Michael Faraday, a Faculty of Science came into being in 1860. The degrees of B.Sc. and D.Sc. were created. This was the first time that they had been used.

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 34.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 13.

*PART C*

EDUCATION IN THE MIDDLE PERIOD OF THE  
NINETEENTH CENTURY

## CHAPTER XI

### TENTATIVE STATE ACTION IN ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

The Committee of Council for Education. Kay-Shuttleworth and the Training of Teachers. The 'Education Vote.'

It was in 1833 that the Government had made its first educational grant, for in that year it had voted a sum of £20,000, which was paid over to the National Society and the British and Foreign School Society in order to supply half the cost of building new school houses. The other half was to be supplied by voluntary contributions. Mr. J. E. G. de Montmorency, a lawyer who wrote *State Intervention in English Education*, calls it "an important and historic precedent," for henceforth the grant became an annual one, increasing in amount as time went on. In 1833 an investigation had been started into the elementary educational facilities which were available in the country. The results of this emphasised both the lack of schooling, especially in the large towns, and the poor condition of many of the schools which did exist. It appeared that out of every ten children of school age, four went to no school at all, three to Sunday schools only, two to inefficient dame schools or private day schools, and only one received a satisfactory education. The report led to a renewed demand by the 'education-mad' party for a State system of education, with a central controlling authority which would have powers to found schools, make Government grants, and superintend the distribution of other funds drawn from local taxation. In 1836 a Central Society of Education was formed to advocate these proposals. It was also suggested that a State training college for teachers should be set up, with model schools, in which the religious instruction would be divided into 'general' (i.e. undenominational), given by the

teachers, and 'special' (i.e. denominational), given by ministers of the different religious bodies, who were to have 'right of entry.' There were several Bills on these lines in the thirties, but they all struck on the same rock—the religious difficulty. The problem was to satisfy several interests which seemed to be irreconcilable. In the first place, the Church of England claimed the traditional right to dominate public education, and a fresh stimulus was being applied by the Oxford Movement, which was arousing in the Church a new sense of its dignity and a new faith in its mission. Against this the dissenters not unnaturally claimed the right to educate their own children; while there was a growing liberal opinion which believed that there should be no religious education in State schools.

In the face of these difficulties the Crown in 1839 set up a Committee of the Privy Council "for the consideration of all matters affecting the education of the people," and "to superintend the application of any sums voted by Parliament for the purpose of promoting public education." Thus a central administrative authority for national education—the forerunner of the present Ministry—was established, not by Act of Parliament, but by Royal Prerogative. A vote of protest was lost by only five votes (280 to 275), and the education grant for 1839 (£30,000 for Great Britain) was passed by only two votes. The first secretary of this Committee was Dr. Kay (1804-77), who later became Sir James Kay-Shuttleworth and one of the most important figures in English educational history. He had graduated in medicine at the age of twenty-three, and had worked in the slum areas of Manchester. There he studied the conditions under which the workers had to live—the disease, dirt, and discomfort which were the inevitable lot of the victims of the Industrial Revolution. By his writings he had drawn public attention to these evils, and in 1835 he was appointed an assistant

Poor Law Commissioner. He had for long regarded education as the key to reform, and had advocated schools, libraries, mechanics' institutes, and instruction in science and domestic economy, as means of helping the workers to help themselves. His work as a poor-law official convinced him more strongly than ever that the education of the poor was a national responsibility. He made a study of schools, both in the homeland and in some European countries where the problem of educating the children of the poor had been receiving special attention. He was particularly impressed with David Stow's school in Glasgow, and with the work of Wehrli, who was one of Fellenberg's assistants at Hofwyl and had there been successfully training teachers to work in schools for the very poor. Kay succeeded in putting into effect the methods and principles which he advocated. At Norwood there was a poor-law school to which some of the London unions had farmed out their workhouse children. It was really a school of industry run on monitorial lines, but so far as it went it was not unsatisfactory. Kay in 1838 secured a grant of £500 per annum from the Home Office. He used this at Norwood to pay teachers imported from Stow's Normal Seminary at Glasgow, and to build workshops and provide apparatus. A system of pupil-teaching was introduced. Half the time was spent in handicrafts, and the girls were taught domestic work. The institution was obviously modelled very largely on Fellenberg's 'Poor School' at Hofwyl. It was rapidly successful and attracted many visitors.

It is easy now to see why, in 1839, Kay was selected to be the secretary of the newly formed Committee of Council for Education. The scheme for setting up a State training college for teachers<sup>1</sup> had had to be abandoned; but a sum of £10,000, which had been voted for the purpose, was

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 114.

divided between the National Society and the British and Foreign School Society. The Committee also made Government inspection a condition of all educational grants, and extended the application of grants to some schools not run by these two societies, provided that daily Scripture reading was included as part of their curriculum. In order to circumvent the 'religious difficulty' a concordat was arrived at in 1840; two inspectors for the Church of England schools were appointed by the Archbishops, who were to issue instructions on religious teaching and receive copies of their inspector's reports on this; but the Committee of Council retained control of these inspectors as regards secular subjects. In general, the inspector's duty was considered to be the collection of accurate information and to give advice and encouragement, if asked to do so, rather than to interfere; he was "to abstain from any interference with the instruction, management or discipline of the school."<sup>1</sup> This is a conception of the inspector's functions which unfortunately did not last.

Kay had a high conception of the part which the school should play in the life of the community. It was to be the focus of the activities of the area which it served—like the Cambridgeshire village college of the present day. A minute of the Committee (1840) says: "The parochial or village library can nowhere be so conveniently and usefully kept as at the school house under the charge of the schoolmaster; and the buildings afford abundant facilities for this purpose. The office of Secretary to the Benefit Society of the parish or village would in no respect injuriously interfere with the schoolmaster's duties; as the meetings of the society would probably be held in the evening. The school-room is, in all respects, conveniently arranged for such meetings, and would be a place of assemblage for the work-

<sup>1</sup> See Frank Smith, *A History of English Elementary Education*, p. 183.

ing classes, preferable to the tavern, where these meetings are too commonly held."<sup>1</sup>

Kay's experience at Norwood had made it obvious to him that no substantial progress could be effected in popular education without properly qualified teachers. The weakness of the monitorial system was becoming manifest and some attempt to train an adequate number of teachers was imperative if a national system of any kind was to be set up. Since the project for a State training college had been wrecked, owing to disagreements as to the religious instruction to be given in its model schools, Kay and a friend of his, E. C. Tufnell, decided to establish a training college at their own risk. The Battersea Normal School, opened in 1840, owed much to Wehrli's training college. "The task proposed was, to reconcile a simplicity of life not remote from the habits of the humble classes, with such proficiency in intellectual attainments, such a knowledge of method, and such skill in the art of teaching, as would enable the pupils selected to become efficient masters of elementary schools."<sup>2</sup> By January 1841 there were thirty-three students, of whom twenty-four were young pupils under a scheme of apprenticeship, while the others were more mature candidates taking a course which lasted a year or more. The Vicar of Battersea offered his parish schools for the practical training of the students and superintended their religious instruction. There were many practical activities; the syllabus included gymnastics and excursions, and the students did their own house-work and tended their garden. Kay himself gave lectures on the theory and practice of education, and everything was done to discourage the rule-of-thumb, monitorial methods, which were inculcated in the British and Foreign School Society's training college at

<sup>1</sup> Minutes, February 20th, 1840, p. 48; quoted by Frank Smith, *The Life of Sir James Kay-Shuttleworth*, p. 98.

<sup>2</sup> See Frank Smith, *A History of English Elementary Education*, p. 180.

Borough Road. A spirit of experiment and free enquiry was encouraged. In 1842 the Government made a grant of £1,000 towards the expenses which had already been incurred in founding and running the College, and the Prince Consort became its patron.

Battersea soon became a pattern for other training colleges. The National Society in 1841 founded St. Mark's, Chelsea; and it also opened a women's college at White-lands in the same neighbourhood. By 1845 there were no less than twenty-two church training colleges in England and Wales. For nearly fifty years to come the training of elementary-school teachers was carried out entirely in residential colleges, run by voluntary societies, on the lines laid down by Kay at Battersea, and subsidised by the State. His college remained a private venture for four years, but it was then taken over by the National Society, on the condition that it should be carried on as nearly as possible along its original lines. The rapid development of training colleges in the forties shows an increasing realisation at this period of the limitations of the monitorial system, and of the truth that educational efficiency in the last resort depends on competent teachers.

The application of public funds to popular education, which had begun in 1833, tended to exacerbate the 'religious difficulty' which was implicit from the days when the Bell and Lancaster monitorial schools were founded and Mrs. Sarah Trimmer raised the issue between them.<sup>1</sup> There were still those who thought that national education was the exclusive concern of the national church. Archdeacon Denison, for example, was a truculent exponent of this form of religious totalitarianism. He pointed out that the National Society had been founded to educate "the children of the poor, *without any exception*, in the doctrine and dis-

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 66.



cipline of the Established Church." Those who took a more liberal view advocated either a 'comprehensive' system in which schools would be connected with some religious body, and would teach a distinctive creed, but in which rights of conscience were respected; or else a 'combined' system in which secular instruction would be given by the teachers and any distinctive religious training which was provided would be in the hands of visiting ministers of the particular denominations. The 'combined' system is a solution which has never commended itself to the people of this country.

However much politicians and ecclesiastics might wrangle on the 'religious difficulty,' it was obvious that something would have to be done. The condition of the working classes in the thirties was giving concern. Unemployment and dear food had helped to foster the Chartist agitation (1838-9), which had collapsed amid rioting and insurrection. There were many who felt that the education—and especially the religious education—of the poor might prove some sort of safeguard against tendencies to violence. In the early 1840's an enquiry was made into the conditions under which children in factories and mines were being employed. The revelations which resulted were absolutely revolting. The Government were therefore moved to produce a Factory Bill (1843), which was sponsored by the Home Secretary, Sir James Graham. Children between the ages of eight and thirteen, in textile mills and workhouses, were to have at least three hours' instruction a day and were not to work for more than six and a half hours. Schools were to be maintained out of the poor rate and Government loans were to be available for the erection of schools. The schoolmaster was to be a member of the Established Church and his appointment by the school trustees would be subject to the approval of the bishop; the trustees themselves were to

include the parish clergyman and the churchwardens. The religious instruction was to be that of the Church of England, and the children were to attend the parish church on Sunday. Thus most of the control of the schools would be given to the Established Church; but the scheme was a 'comprehensive' one, for a conscience clause made it possible for nonconformist parents to withdraw their children from catechism and attendance at church. Even so, dissenters were hardly likely to accept a scheme which put the management of the rate-aided education of the poor under the control of the Church of England. The Government offered concessions; but a vigorous opposition went on all over the country and the Bill had to be withdrawn. Thus a State system of education was postponed for nearly thirty years.

The result did, however, tend to stimulate voluntary effort. A new party arose, called the Voluntaryists and consisting mainly of Congregationalists. Their tenets were that all education must have a religious basis; that State interference in education is unwarrantable; and that the spread of education must therefore depend on individual effort and self-help. Freedom and competition, it was said, are the best safeguards for improvement. This was, in fact, the doctrine of free trade as applied to education. The Voluntaryists raised funds and opened schools, of which there were 364 by 1851; not one of them was receiving any kind of State or rate aid. But even among the nonconformists it began soon to be realised that voluntarism was a mistake. "The voluntary principle is inapplicable in education, because it is precisely those who need education most that are least capable of demanding it, desiring it, or even conceiving it."<sup>1</sup>

We have already seen the noteworthy attempts which

<sup>1</sup> Quoted from Edward Baines in Birchenough, *History of Elementary Education*, p. 86.

Kay (or Kay-Shuttleworth, as he must now be called) had been making to foster the training of teachers, for he realised that this was vital to the whole cause of popular education. In 1846 a scheme which he had drawn up was announced by the Committee of Council on Education. The details are important. Stipends were to be offered to selected boys and girls indentured as pupil-teachers for a five-years' apprenticeship, from the age of thirteen to eighteen. Grants were to be made to the teachers who trained them and the pupil-teachers were to be examined annually by Her Majesty's Inspectors. Broadly speaking, the pupil-teachers received seven and a half hours' instruction every week, before or after school hours, and they were occupied for five and a half hours every day in teaching or some kindred activity. At the end of the apprenticeship pupil-teachers could compete for Queen's Scholarships, to be held at a training college; while unsuccessful candidates were to be given a preferential claim for minor appointments in the Civil Service. An annual grant was to be made to training colleges in respect of each ex-pupil-teacher student in training. College-trained teachers were to receive proficiency grants from the Government, in addition to a salary paid by the school managers; grants were also to be available in aid of gardens, workshops, and the like. Finally there was to be a pension scheme for teachers retiring after at least fifteen years' service.

This scheme was imitated in part from a pupil-teacher system, which Kay-Shuttleworth had already seen at work in Holland, and he hoped by means of it to supersede the use of the juvenile monitors of the Bell and Lancaster schools—'monitorial humbug,' as he called it. It seems probable none the less that he regarded the pupil-teacher system as merely a temporary and opportunist method of bridging the gap between the employment of monitors and

the introduction of an efficient scheme for training adult teachers. But it was a considerable step forward. In spite of extremist objections Kay-Shuttleworth's proposals met with considerable support. In 1847 an education vote of £100,000 was passed by a large majority, and from 1848 to 1850 it was raised to £125,000.<sup>1</sup> Thus the period of tentative State aid to education was now ended, and henceforward the Government was committed to a definite policy in educational administration. In the debate on the education vote in 1847 the position had been summed up by Macaulay, who was a warm supporter of State education. He bases his arguments on the familiar contention that it is the duty of every Government "to take order for giving security to the persons and property of the members of the community," and that a system of popular education is the best means of securing this. It is therefore "the right and duty of the State to provide means of education for the common people." He shows the fallacy of the current analogy between free trade in economics and free trade in education; and he quotes statistics to prove that the criminal classes are the worst educated. This is a limited conception of the aims of popular education, but it was sufficient to justify a State system. In his peroration Macaulay appealed to "future generations, which, while enjoying all the blessings of an impartial and efficient system of public instruction, will find it difficult to believe that the authors of that system should have had to struggle with a vehement and pertinacious opposition, and still more difficult to believe that such an opposition was offered in the name of civil and religious freedom."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The 'Management Clauses' of 1847 made it possible for the Government to provide funds for schools on the direct application of any denomination, and not solely through the agency of the National and British Societies. This was of particular value to Roman Catholics, because the Catholic Poor School Committee was recognised for this purpose.

<sup>2</sup> April 18th, 1847; Macaulay's *Speeches* (Everyman edition), pp. 349-69.

## Chapter XII

# STATE SUPERVISION IN ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

Insufficiency of the Voluntary System. The Newcastle Commission. Robert Lowe and 'Payment by Results.'

By the middle forties it was generally recognised that the resources of voluntary effort were not of themselves sufficient to provide for the educational needs of the country. In 1846 Dr. Hook, the Vicar of Leeds, had published a pamphlet entitled *On the Means of Rendering more efficient the Education of the People*. He advocated the 'combined' system. The State should take over complete responsibility for elementary schools so far as secular instruction was concerned, and these schools should be supported from the rates; but on two afternoons a week ministers of the various denominations should have the 'right of entry' and give doctrinal instruction. Teachers were to hold certificates issued by the Government, and they were to be paid direct from this same source. The curriculum was to be broadened so as to include mathematics, drawing, geography, history, and music. The pamphlet aroused a great deal of controversy; but Kay-Shuttleworth realised that the 'comprehensive' scheme (i.e. a denominational school with a conscience clause) was the only kind which the nation would accept, and subsequent history has proved that he was right. In 1850, however, the advocates of a 'secular' system founded the National Public Schools Association. Among its supporters it included men of various opinions who were united by their common impatience with the 'religious difficulty' and their belief in the importance of education. In 1850 they introduced a Bill which was sponsored by W. J. Fox, and which in some respects foreshadows the Education Act of 1870. It proposed that com-

pulsory powers should be given to ratepayers to establish schools where there was a deficiency and to levy an education rate for the support of free and secular schools for children aged seven to thirteen. No provision was made for the existing denominational schools. The opposition of the denominationalists killed the Bill, for both the Church and the nonconformists were united in a common horror of secular education. Yet it was obvious that if a national system of popular education was to be secured, some means must be found to supplement State grants by local contributions. Several Bills with this aim were introduced. Sir John Russell's Borough Bill in 1853 proposed that school committees should be set up in boroughs in order to assist schools which were already in receipt—or eligible for receipt—of grants from the Committee of Council. This scheme was dropped, but there were three more unsuccessful Education Bills in 1855. That of Sir John Pakington (No. 2) envisaged the permissive establishment of local boards with power to aid existing schools and to set up new schools, the denominational colour of which was to be determined by the type of religion most prevalent in the area to be served—though, of course, a conscience clause was provided.

The inherent difficulty of the position with which all the abortive proposals were trying to cope was that voluntarism of itself could not provide and finance a national system of education; rate-aid must therefore be invoked to supplement its resources from contributions and fees and to make up the not more than equivalent grant from the Committee of Council for Education. But rate-aid implies local control, and those who pay rates are of all shades of religious opinion. Not unnaturally, there were a large number of people who hotly disputed the claim of the Church of England to be responsible for national education—a claim

based mainly on history and tradition; yet, except among the extreme secularists, it was generally agreed that popular education must have a religious basis. The State's contribution to education had been steadily growing since 1833, and with it voluntary effort had also grown. But it was not clear that the voluntary system with Government aid was proving capable of meeting national needs and of being so developed as to meet future needs. There were many parties and much conflict, and the dissatisfaction was general; but recognition of the importance of the education question was shown by the creation of an Education Department by an Order in Council dated February 25th, 1856. It took the place of the Privy Council's Committee for Education. The Lord President of the Council was nominally its chairman; but, as he was a peer, a Vice-President was also appointed, who was a member of the House of Commons and a member of the Government in power. He was thus responsible to the House for the expenditure of his Department and was in practice the head of it.

To investigate the complicated problems of national education, a Royal Commission was appointed in 1858, under the chairmanship of the Duke of Newcastle. Its aim was "to inquire into the Present State of Popular Education in England, and to consider and report what measures, if any, are required for the Extension of sound and cheap Elementary Instruction to all Classes of the People." In order to discover the "present state of popular education" ten assistant commissioners carried out an investigation in ten selected areas of differing types. It was found that a few monitorial schools still existed, but the pupil-teacher system was proving a success, though it was as yet in its initial stages. The policy of leaving popular education to the churches and the voluntary associations had in a way been justified, for it was estimated that 1 in 7.83 of the

population was attending school.<sup>1</sup> It had been 1 in 14 or 16 forty years before, and 1 in 21 at the beginning of the century. But the great weaknesses of the system were the early leaving age (due to the demand for child labour) and the short duration and great irregularity of school life. It was estimated that only 29 per cent. of the children in inspected schools were over the age of ten, and only 19 per cent. over eleven.<sup>2</sup> The moral tone of the schools was said to be improving, but the education given was in many cases most elementary and superficial; and there was a tendency for teachers to neglect the younger children and hand them over to the pupil-teachers.

The Newcastle Commission reported in 1861 and made their recommendations for "the extension of sound and cheap elementary instruction." The adjectives are significant. Immense sums had been frittered away on the Crimean War, and the annually increasing education grant (it was £663,435 in 1858) was regarded with some alarm. As at other periods in our history, in the face of expenditure on war, national education was regarded as a suitable field for economies. At any rate, value for money should be secured. The Commission thought that the system of State grants inaugurated in 1833 had not succeeded in effecting a "general diffusion of sound elementary education amongst all classes of the poor." They did not, however, advocate the withdrawal of the grants, but they wished rather to secure regular attendance, sounder teaching, and a wider curriculum for older pupils. The existing system was not without value, but it had serious defects. The central government was paying for benefits which were mainly local, and the most needy areas got the least help, because they could not raise from voluntary sources the necessary half-cost

<sup>1</sup> See *Newcastle Commission Report*, vol. i, p. 87.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, vol. i, p. 171.



of buildings and maintenance. Again, elementary subjects were badly taught, and the whole system was getting unwieldy and difficult to manage. The Commissioners therefore recommended a simplification. The State should pay capitation grants, with an additional grant for pupil-teachers, to schools which had a satisfactory report from Her Majesty's inspector. These grants should be supplemented by local grants from county and borough rates, based on the attainments of the pupils as assessed by examination by the inspector.<sup>1</sup> Thus was introduced the system of 'payment by results' which hampered the development of English elementary education for many years to come. There was no suggestion of abolishing school fees; the amount received from both State and local contributions was not to exceed the amount raised by fees and subscriptions. Nor was there any idea of introducing compulsory attendance, as had already been done in Prussia. "An attempt," it was said, "to replace an independent system of education by a compulsory system, managed by the Government, would be met by objections, both religious and political, of far graver character in this country than any with which it has had to contend in Prussia."<sup>2</sup> To administer the local grant county or borough boards were to be elected, but they were to have no power in the management of the schools, nor were they to concern themselves with the religious teaching given there. Such, then, were the recommendations of the Newcastle Commission. As one would expect, they had been reached after much compromise, and they aroused a great deal of criticism. The Government therefore felt unable to risk embodying their proposals in an Education Bill.

Kay-Shuttleworth had retired in 1849. He had laid the

<sup>1</sup> See *Newcastle Commission Report*, vol. i, pp. 544-5.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, vol. i, p. 300.

foundations of English elementary education; he had stimulated public interest and his pupil-teachers had put an end to the mechanical monitorial system. To him education meant an inculcation of habits, a training of skills, and a development of intelligence; the school was to be a centre of social life and culture. His views were very far in advance of those of most educational administrators of his day. But by the time of the Newcastle Commission national educational administration was in the hands of a very different person. Robert Lowe had been Vice-President of the Education Department since 1859. He was a Liberal free-trader and was prepared to apply to education his economic theories.

The late fifties and early sixties are a period in which the belief in the value of examinations was greatly strengthened. It was increasingly felt that they afforded a reliable way of selecting merit and of avoiding nepotism. The Oxford and Cambridge locals date from 1858; the Science and Art examinations from 1861. Open competition was gradually introduced into the Civil Service from 1855 onwards. These facts have a bearing on Lowe's conception of the administration of popular education. He thought that if minor Civil Service appointments (e.g. postmen) were thrown open to competition, poor people would be the more ready to keep their children at school at their own expense, in the hope of their securing a post of this kind by examination. In short, the scheme squared with free-trade theories of demand and supply. Lowe was therefore unwilling to accept the Newcastle Commission's recommendation that education grants should be paid from the rates; but he proposed to retain the denominational character of popular education and "the practice of giving grants from the central office in aid of local subscriptions." One of the chief weaknesses of the system, as revealed by the investigations of the Newcastle Commissioners, was low and

irregular school attendance. It had been estimated that in 1858, of 2,213,694 children at school, 38·81 per cent. attended for less than one year.<sup>1</sup> Lowe tried to remedy this state of affairs by basing the Education Department's grants, not simply on the amount raised by local voluntary effort, but on the attendance of pupils under a certificated teacher, and subject to the results of an examination of each child in the 'three R's' by an inspector. "Hitherto," he said, "we have been living under a system of bounties and protection. Now we propose to have a little free trade." So the teachers' pension scheme, grants for apparatus, and pupil-teachers' stipends were withdrawn, and grants to training colleges were cut down. These measures were embodied in the 'Revised Code' of 1862—a document issued by the Education Department, and having statutory force. In reply to criticisms Lowe said of the new system: "If it is not cheap, it shall be efficient; if it is not efficient, it shall be cheap."<sup>2</sup>

'Payment by results' lasted with modifications for nearly forty years; it was not finally disposed of until the Code of 1897. Can anything be said in its favour? It did certainly effect economies. In 1861 the education grant was £813,441; this fell to £636,806 in 1865. The immediate effect of the Revised Code was also a rise in average attendance. In 1862 this was 888,923; in 1866, 1,048,493. So long as Parliament acquiesced in child labour and refused to introduce compulsory schooling, the most that could be done was to give the child, who would probably leave school to go to work at about the age of twelve, or less, the minimum of elementary instruction. This was assessed under the Revised Code as ability to read a short passage from a newspaper, to take it down from dictation, and to do arithmetic up to bills of parcels. The scheme of work for the elementary school was

<sup>1</sup> See *Report*, pp. 79 and 173.

<sup>2</sup> Speech, February 13th, 1862, *Hansard*, vol. 165, 229.

also graded and organised far more definitely than had been customary hitherto. The syllabus mentioned above was for the leaving year—the Sixth ‘Standard’; but each of the previous five standards had also a definite course of work leading up to it. The child entered Standard I at the age of about six; at the end of the year he was examined and passed on to the next standard. If he were successful in his examination, he could earn his grant, but he could not be presented more than once at the same grade. It was a rigid and mechanical method of promotion, but it did tend to stiffen up school organisation.

On the other hand, the shortcomings of the Revised Code were clearly seen by such educationists as Kay-Shuttleworth and Matthew Arnold; and subsequent history shows the justice of their condemnation of it. The examination system resulted—as it so often does—in over-pressure on the children, due to anxiety to produce ‘results.’ The teaching of the three ‘R’s’ may have improved because teachers were tempted to concentrate on these grant-earning subjects and neglect other work; but this encouraged mechanical methods in teaching.<sup>1</sup> The New Code also tended to demoralise the teachers. Their position in the eyes of school managers, and therefore their very livelihood, might depend on the amount of grant earned by their pupils. Hence there was a temptation to falsify registers and hoodwink inspectors by making children learn off their reading book by heart. One of the inspectors stated that he used to try to counteract this practice by requiring pupils to read their book backwards. It is easy to realise how this situation led to a feeling of hostility—or, at any rate, of distrust, between teachers and inspectors. That feeling out-lived the system of ‘payment by results,’ and it is hardly

<sup>1</sup> In the *Life and Remains of R. H. Quick* (pp. 128–57 *passim*) there are some interesting first-hand accounts of the teaching in elementary schools under the conditions imposed by ‘Payment by Results.’

dead in some quarters yet. The quality of the teachers also declined owing to the New Code. The withdrawal of the pupil-teachers' grants caused a serious decrease in their numbers and efficiency, just at the time when the number of pupils was increasing. The result was a growth in the size of classes. There was less inducement and less opportunity for head teachers to train pupil-teachers, and thus the standard of admission to training colleges had to be lowered. This again reacted against the schools. "When the numbers in attendance reach a certain point and competent assistants are withheld, it is inevitable that one end or other of the school must be neglected and that the victimised portion will be that which is least likely to produce money for the examination grant."<sup>1</sup> Kay-Shuttleworth had some justification for his statement that "the Revised Code has constructed nothing; it has only pulled down."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See *Report of Committee of Council on Education*, for 1866-7, pp. 394-5.

<sup>2</sup> *Memorandum on Popular Education*, p. 30; quoted by Frank Smith, *The Life of Sir James Kay-Shuttleworth*, p. 287.

### *Chapter XIII*

## THE EDUCATION ACT OF 1870

The 1867 Reform Act: "We must educate our masters." W. E. Forster. Board Schools and Voluntary Schools.

ALTHOUGH attempts were made to tinker with the Revised Code, it soon became obvious that it would never succeed in providing an adequate system of popular education. But there was a growing realisation of the necessity for it. Even a convinced individualist like J. S. Mill said in 1859: "Is it not almost a self-evident maxim that the State should require and compel the education up to a certain standard of every human being who is born its citizen?"<sup>1</sup> Herbert Spencer and Thomas Huxley were also arousing public interest in education. Yet the actual state of the children in many parts of the country was still deplorable, owing to the demand for their labour. The non-contentious provisions of Graham's Bill of 1843 had been passed as a Factory Act in the following year, and this compelled the parents of children who worked in textile mills to make them attend school on three full days, or six half-days, in each week. Further regulations of 1864 and 1867 extended these provisions to non-textile factories and workshops. But evasion was easy; and in agriculture the employment of children in gangs was still common. The children were sent away to work for farmers who were short-handed, and were put in the charge of an overseer. It was a system which obviously was liable to abuse. Secularists and Voluntaryists alike realised the seriousness of these evils. Societies of various kinds were formed in big towns, such as Manchester, Birmingham, and Liverpool, to try to help deserving parents to pay school fees and to encourage them to send their children to school regularly.

<sup>1</sup> *On Liberty*, chap. v, p. 157 (Routledge edit.).

In 1867 came the Reform Bill, which gave the vote to householders who paid rates. This enfranchised the artisans of the big industrial towns who had not been qualified as 'ten-pound householders' under the 1832 Reform Act. A lodger franchise was also added in Committee. Mr. Lowe, who did not approve of the Bill, said, in an oft-quoted epigram, "We must educate our masters."

In the following year the Liberals came into power, under Mr. Gladstone, and the Education Department was put in the charge of W. E. Forster, a Quaker, a Radical, and a prosperous West Riding woollen manufacturer. He had married a daughter of Dr. Thomas Arnold, and, like his father-in-law, was deeply interested in education and in social questions. In the large towns of the North, such as Bradford, which Forster represented in Parliament, the population had outstripped the school provision; there was not only a lack of school places, but also an uneven distribution of schools. It was impossible for Forster and the Government which he represented to ignore the great existing voluntary system, though there were many Liberals and nonconformists who would have liked to see the establishment of a system of publicly controlled schools financed from State funds. But, as Gladstone himself said in the House: "It was with us an absolute necessity—a necessity of honour and a necessity of policy—to respect and to favour the educational establishments and machinery we found existing in the country. It was impossible for us to join in the language or adopt the tone which was conscientiously and consistently taken by some members of the House who look upon these voluntary schools, having generally a denominational character, as admirable passing expedients, fit, indeed, to be tolerated for a time, deserving all credit on account of the motives which led to their foundation, but wholly unsatisfactory as to their main pur-

pose and therefore to be supplanted by something they think better. . . . That has never been the theory of the Government.”<sup>1</sup> This attitude led to serious breaches inside the Liberal Party, but Gladstone and Forster stood their ground. In February 1870 Forster had introduced a Bill in which (in his own words), he proposed “to complete the present voluntary system, to fill up gaps, sparing the public money where it can be done without, procuring as much as we can the assistance of the parents, and welcoming as much as we rightly can the co-operation and aid of those benevolent men who desire to assist their neighbours.”<sup>2</sup> Thus the 1870 Act was essentially a compromise. It did not create a new national system of education, or a completely compulsory system, or a free system. It left room for voluntary effort and school fees and private endowments.

The Bill divided up the country into ‘school districts,’ which were the municipal boroughs or civil parishes. London was a separate ‘school district.’ The Education Department was given power to investigate the available school accommodation in each district and to determine how much further accommodation, if any, was necessary. If there was a deficiency, the denominations were allowed a period of grace, until the end of the year 1870, in which to supply it, and they could apply for a parliamentary grant in aid of building, enlarging, improving, or fitting up an elementary school; but they were to get no help for this purpose from the rates. If they did not, or could not, supply the deficiency—‘fill up the gaps,’ as Forster had said—a new local authority, the school board, was to be set up. It was to be elected *ad hoc* by the ratepayers, and women were eligible for membership of it; it would hold office for three years. It would have powers to establish and maintain public

<sup>1</sup> *Hansard*, cciii, 746, July 22nd, 1870.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, cxcix, 444, February 17th, 1870.



elementary schools with rate aid, in addition to Government grant and school fees. The school board was also to be empowered to appoint an officer or officers to enforce the attendance of children between the ages of five and twelve, unless satisfactory arrangements for their education had already been made. Schooling was not to be made free. Section 17 of the Act laid it down that: "Every child attending a school provided by any school board shall pay such weekly fee as may be prescribed by the School Board, with the consent of the Education Department; but the school board may, from time to time, for a renewable period not exceeding six months, remit the whole or any part of such fee in the case of any child when they are of opinion that the parent of such child is unable from poverty to pay the same." In any case, "the ordinary payments in respect of the instruction from each scholar" were not to exceed ninepence a week.<sup>1</sup> School boards were left to decide whether their schools should give religious instruction, but if it was provided, "no religious catechism or religious formulary which is distinctive of any particular denomination shall be taught."<sup>2</sup> This is the famous 'Cowper-Temple Clause.' Section 7 (1), moreover, stated that: "It shall not be required, as a condition of any child being admitted into or continuing in the school, that he shall attend or abstain from attending any Sunday school, or any place of religious worship, or that he shall attend any religious observance or instruction in religious subjects in the school or elsewhere, from which observance or instruction he may be withdrawn by his parent, or that he shall, if withdrawn by his parent, attend the school on any day set apart for religious observance by the religious body to which his parent belongs." In order to facilitate withdrawal from religious instruction, when desired, it was provided that this should be given either at

<sup>1</sup> *Education Act*, 1870, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 14 (2).

the beginning or at the end of a school session. Even in a State-aided voluntary school no child was to be compelled to attend religious instruction, and the 'conscience clause' was obligatory on all schools which received Government grant. In both board schools and voluntary schools alike religious instruction was no longer inspected or enforced as a condition of grant, and this was made wholly in respect of secular instruction.

The school boards were abolished by the Education Act of 1902, but the dual system of education which was set up in 1870 still exists. The two types of school were clearly marked. The board schools were secular and non-denominational; they were provided by local authorities (i.e. the school boards), and they were maintained out of rates and Government grants. The voluntary schools, on the other hand, were for the most part denominational. They had been built by endowments or subscriptions, and were maintained partly from this source and partly by Government grants—but not by rates; and they were controlled by 'managers,' who were not elected, as were the members of the school boards. In both types of school it was still possible to charge fees. It should be noted that the school boards did not cover the whole country, but were set up only in places where voluntary effort was not sufficient to supply the local demand.

As has been said, the Act, which came into force on August 8th, 1870, was a compromise, and for that reason it incurred bitter criticism and opposition from several quarters. But for all that, it was a notable achievement, for it did gradually 'fill up the gaps' and so secure a more adequate supply of schools. But for it, England would have fallen behind among the nations of Europe. The noteworthy advance which Prussia, for example, had made since the beginning of the century, and her recent suc-

cesses in the war against France, were attributed as much to her educational system as to her military organisation. Mr. G. M. Trevelyan makes the comment that "it was characteristic of the two nations that whereas the German people already enjoyed good schools, but not self-government, the rulers of England only felt compelled to 'educate their masters' when the working-men were in full possession of the franchise."<sup>1</sup> Finally, it should be recorded that one of the effects of the institution of school boards was to stimulate voluntary effort. During the 'period of grace'—a bare five months—3,342 applications for building grants were made; of these 1,333 were subsequently withdrawn, but of the remainder over 1,600 were allowed. In the years immediately preceding 1870 the number of applications had averaged about 150. Between 1870 and 1876 a million and a half new school places were provided; but of these two-thirds were due to the churches and only one-third to the new school boards.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *British History in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 353.

<sup>2</sup> The first 'board school' was opened at St. Austell, Cornwall, in December 1872.

## Chapter XIV

### UNIVERSITY EDUCATION

J. H. Newman and Mark Pattison. The Oxford and Cambridge Acts.

EDUCATIONAL activity in the middle decades of the nineteenth century was not confined to working out the problem of providing a national system of elementary schools. In university and secondary education there is also progress to show. University reform at this period owed much to John Henry Newman and Mark Pattison, though their methods of approach to it differed greatly. Newman (1801-90) had been a fellow of Oriel in the days of the 'noetics.'<sup>1</sup> He was later caught up in the Oxford Movement, and finally, after many spiritual wrestlings, which are recorded in his *Apologia pro Vita Sua*, he joined the Church of Rome in 1845. Nine years later he was sent to Dublin as rector of a Roman Catholic university which had just been established. This institution proved a failure, partly through lack of State recognition, and partly because Newman had little ability for organisation or administration. But his theories on university education are set out in *The Idea of a University*, which has more than a contemporary interest. Apparently Newman has in mind the Platonic *idéα*, and his search is for an academic *Republic*. To him all knowledge is one; and as man's most fundamental relationship is to God, so theology is the most 'architectonic' of the sciences—the basis of all true education. It cannot be separated from the other forms of knowledge as a distinct subject. Mere intellectual education, therefore, is not necessarily good in itself. In a famous passage Newman says that if he had to choose between two university courses, one non-residential but intellectually exacting, and the other residential but intellectually disorganised, he would prefer the latter. Such a com-

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 88.

munity "will constitute a whole, it will embody a specific idea, it will represent a doctrine, it will administer a code of conduct, and it will furnish principles of thought and action. It will give birth to a living teaching, which in course of time will take the shape of a self-perpetuating tradition or a *genius loci*, as it is sometimes called, which haunts the home where it has been born, and which imbues and forms, more or less, and one by one, every individual who is successively brought under its shadow."<sup>1</sup> The contrast between Oxford and the twenty-year-old University of London<sup>2</sup> is implicit in the whole passage, which does indeed sum up the true inwardness of university life. That the truth of Newman's contention is increasingly being realised is shown by the attempts of our modern 'provincial' universities to provide residential facilities for more and more of their students. Yet Newman is no despiser of intellectual achievement. The arts and the sciences must play their part in a university education, but they must be regarded by a philosophic habit of mind which looks for relationships and co-ordinates knowledge. For knowledge is "something more than a sort of passive reception of scraps and details; it is a something and it does a something, which never will issue from the most strenuous efforts of a set of teachers, with no mutual sympathies and no intercommunion, of a set of examiners with no opinions which they dare profess, and with no common principles, who are teaching or questioning a set of youths who do not know them, and do not know each other, on a large number of subjects, different in kind, and connected by no wide philosophy, three times a week, or three times a year, or once in three years, in chill lecture-rooms or on a pompous anniversary."<sup>3</sup> And since it is the Church which supplies the underlying, unifying, 'architec-

<sup>1</sup> *The Idea of a University*, Discourse VI, § 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, Discourse VI, § 8.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, Discourse VI, § 9.

tonic' science, it is the Church which is to devise and superintend the organisation of the university. In short, the academic *Republic* for Newman is an idealised Catholic Oxford.

Mark Pattison (1813-84) had been an undergraduate at Oriel, but in 1839 he became a Fellow of Lincoln and was ultimately Rector of this college until his death. In his early days he too was influenced by the Oxford Movement; but he afterwards reacted violently against it in the opposite direction to that which Newman took. He was ill at ease in the Church of England and a bitter critic of its representatives. (He contributed to the once famous *Essays and Reviews*, which were considered unorthodox and incurred episcopal condemnation.) This made him rather a lonely figure in the Oxford of his day; but he had a brilliant intellect and a broad, philosophical outlook.<sup>1</sup> He greatly interested himself in university reform,<sup>2</sup> and in particular he advocated the professorial, as contrasted with the tutorial, system of instruction. This method was customary in Germany and also in Scotland, where the universities had nothing comparable with the colleges of Oxford and Cambridge. The professorial system had been advocated by the *Edinburgh Review* in the early years of the century, and more recently by the founders of London University; but the giving of instruction by tutors was closely bound up with the existence of colleges—and both institutions were strongly entrenched in Oxford. Pattison did not go so far as to advocate the complete replacement of tutorial by professorial teaching; but his views, as can be understood, were by no means popular in Oxford, and his own personality did little to commend them. He is a trenchant critic of the low standards of the pass degree, which demanded little

<sup>1</sup> There is a good picture of Mark Pattison in Tuckwell, *Reminiscences of Oxford*, chap. xiii.

<sup>2</sup> See his *Suggestions on Academical Organisation*, *passim*.

more than school studies.<sup>1</sup> He maintains that "the first and indispensable condition of the efficiency of the higher education is an intellectual activity, general, pervading, sustained; and that this activity be directed upon the central and proper object of human knowledge. . . . The instructor does not lay down principles, he initiates into methods; he is himself an investigator, and he is inviting the pupil to accompany him on his road."<sup>2</sup> To Pattison, therefore, research is a primary function of the university. The whole issue has been raised again in our own time by Mr. 'Bruce Truscott.'<sup>3</sup>

The champions of academic reform had made considerable headway during the forties. As Mark Pattison himself said: "A restless fever of change had spread through the colleges—the wonder-working phrase 'University Reform' had been uttered. . . . We were ready to reform a great deal—everything—only show us how to set about it and give us the necessary powers."<sup>4</sup> Both inside and outside the university this spirit was felt. In 1849 a memorial was presented to the Prime Minister, Lord John Russell. It was signed by members of both Oxford and Cambridge, and by Fellows of the Royal Society, and it urged that a Royal Commission should be issued to enquire into the state, discipline, and revenues of the two Universities. The investigation was carried out and the Commissioners reported in 1852. Those who had visited Oxford had encountered considerable opposition, but their colleagues who went to Cambridge were more cordially received. The recommendations of the two Reports formed the basis of the Oxford University Act of 1854 and the Cambridge University Act of 1856. In both cases the aim was to clear away existing handicaps and to give the Universities a clear field to develop along

<sup>1</sup> See *op. cit.*, p. 163.

<sup>3</sup> In *Redbrick University*, *passim*.

<sup>2</sup> *Essays*, vol. i, pp. 418 and 420.

<sup>4</sup> *Memoirs*, p. 245.

their own lines without further State interference. One obstacle to reform lay in the fact that the Universities were still tied and bound by founders' regulations or ancient statutes. Oxford was still governed by enactments of Archbishop Laud, and Cambridge by those of Queen Elizabeth. The real power lay with the heads of colleges—with the Hebdomadal Board at Oxford and the Caput at Cambridge. These alone could initiate legislation, and there was a final veto in the hands of all M.A.s who had kept their names on the books. The Acts of 1854 and 1856 therefore widened the representation of the Hebdomadal Board and the Caput and gave greater power to other representatives of the University, both resident and non-resident. Measures could now be discussed in English instead of in Latin, as hitherto. In the colleges most of the old local restrictions as to 'close' or 'founder's kin' scholarships and fellowships were removed, and these were thrown open to competition. Religious tests were removed for admission to the University or for taking the degree of B.A.—which, it should be noted, gave no right to any share in the government of the University. The test was not finally abolished for all degrees (except those in divinity) until 1871.<sup>1</sup> At the same time a number of new professorships were founded, and endowments of older ones were augmented from the revenues of certain colleges. The professors were also given a place of greater importance in university administration. The new system afforded some sort of approximation between the views of those who, like Sir William Hamilton or (to some extent) Mark Pattison, advocated the German or Scottish plan, and those of the Oxford Tutors' Association and other champions of the current tutorial method of instruction.

<sup>1</sup> One is still admitted to the M.A. degree at Oxford "in nomine Domini, Patris, Filii et Spiritus Sancti." There is an excellent Appendix on the history of the movement for the abolition of University Tests in Dicey, *Law and Opinion in England* (pp. 477-81).



The tutors were not displaced, but the professors could carry on research in and teach subjects which the colleges could not provide; also many professorships now had college fellowships attached to them, and this strengthened the link.

The Commissioners had drawn attention to the great and largely unnecessary expense of university life. One of the reasons why London University had been founded was to provide university facilities for those of limited means. In 1832 a university had also been established at Durham. Before the coming of the railways the country areas of Northumberland, Westmorland, Cumberland, and Durham were much cut off from communication with the rest of the country. The population was sparse and the clergy were for the most part very poor and inadequately educated. Bishop Van Mildert sought to remedy this state of affairs by founding the University of Durham. It was started in the Norman castle which fronts the cathedral, and it was run on the residential lines of Oxford and Cambridge, but at a much lower cost. Subsequently another college (Hatfield Hall) on still more economical lines was founded. It was at once crowded out and further accommodation had to be provided. It was thus obvious that there was a strong demand for university education at reasonable rates. The Oxford and Cambridge University Acts did something to meet this by making possible the opening of private 'halls,' presided over by an M.A.; this was a reversion to a common practice in the Middle Ages. In the event this scheme was adopted only to a limited extent—as was also the subsequent admission of 'non-collegiate' or 'unattached' students living in licensed lodgings. But there is no doubt that extravagance became less fashionable at Oxford and Cambridge as the second half of the nineteenth century progressed. This was due largely to the development of secondary education and the throwing

open of scholarships so as to widen the field from which candidates were drawn. It is also probable, as Professor Archer suggests,<sup>1</sup> that the development of sports at the Universities put an end to the exclusiveness of the hunting, shooting, and racing type of undergraduate. The Oxford and Cambridge boat race, as an annual event, dates from 1856; inter-collegiate boat races started about 1815 and were properly organised from about 1837.<sup>2</sup> Cricket (in top-hats) also developed in the forties. All these activities gave prominence in college to the undergraduate who can do things—and not to the man with the greatest wealth or the ‘best family’ or the most extravagant tastes; and this characteristic fortunately has remained true of both Oxford and Cambridge.

<sup>1</sup> *Secondary Education in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 157.

<sup>2</sup> See *Brasenose Quatercentenary Monographs*, vol. ii, no. xiv, i.

## Chapter XV

### SECONDARY EDUCATION

The Clarendon and Schools Inquiry Commissions.

THE close association between the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge and the public schools meant that an investigation of the state of the former inevitably drew public attention to the latter also. In spite of the growing importance of science and modern studies, which had been illustrated by the Great Exhibition of 1851 and in a hundred other different ways, the public-schools curriculum in most cases remained unaffected by contemporary progress; and it was realised that both France and Germany were ahead of us in the field of secondary education, as well as in that of elementary and technical education. Public opinion on this point is well exemplified by a leader in the *Illustrated London News* of May 4th, 1861. "No Latin or Greek," it says, "may make Master Jacky a dull boy; but Latin and Greek without anything else go far towards making Master Jacky a very dullard. Parents are beginning to feel this, and to ask whether a skinful of classical knowledge, with a little birching thrown in for nothing, be an equivalent for the two hundred a year they pay for the education of a boy at Eton. It is true that the young Hopefuls of the aristocracy *may* learn French, German, drawing, and mathematics at public schools—just as they may learn Berlin-wool work or the cornet-à-pistons—but these branches of polite education are treated as 'extras' and charged for accordingly." The general tone of the public schools had certainly been raised by Arnold and those whom he influenced, but it was still felt that ignorance and idleness were far too common. It was for these reasons that in 1861 Lord Palmerston's Government set up a Royal Commission, under the chairmanship of Lord Clarendon, to enquire into the revenues,

management, and curriculum of the nine chief public schools—Eton, Winchester, Westminster, Charterhouse, Harrow, Rugby, Shrewsbury, Merchant Taylors', and St. Paul's. The Commissioners carried out a thorough investigation and issued their report in 1864. They had something to say to allay public misgivings. They praised the discipline and moral tone of the schools and emphasised the progress that had been made during the previous twenty-five years; but the curriculum came in for serious criticism, and the ineffectiveness of much of the teaching was laid bare. "The course of study," says the *Report*, "has been enlarged, the methods of teaching improved, the proportion of masters to boys increased; the quantity of work exacted is greater than it was, though still in too many cases less than it ought to be. At the same time the advance in moral and religious training has more than kept pace with that in intellectual discipline. The old roughness of manners has in great measure disappeared. . . . The boys are better lodged and cared for, and more attention is paid to their health and comfort. Among the services which [the public schools] have rendered is undoubtedly to be reckoned the maintenance of classical literature as the staple of English education, a service which far outweighs the error of having clung to these studies too exclusively. A second and greater still is the creation of a system of government and discipline for boys, the excellence of which is admitted to have been most important in its effects on national character and social life."<sup>1</sup> At the same time the Commissioners expressed the opinion that "in their course of study, sound and valuable in its main elements but wanting in breadth and flexibility, there are defects which destroy in many cases, and impair in all, its value as an education of the mind; and which are made more prominent at the present time by the extension of know-

<sup>1</sup> *Report of Public Schools Commission*, p. 56.

management, and curriculum of the nine chief public schools—Eton, Winchester, Westminster, Charterhouse, Harrow, Rugby, Shrewsbury, Merchant Taylors', and St. Paul's. The Commissioners carried out a thorough investigation and issued their report in 1864. They had something to say to allay public misgivings. They praised the discipline and moral tone of the schools and emphasised the progress that had been made during the previous twenty-five years; but the curriculum came in for serious criticism, and the ineffectiveness of much of the teaching was laid bare. "The course of study," says the *Report*, "has been enlarged, the methods of teaching improved, the proportion of masters to boys increased; the quantity of work exacted is greater than it was, though still in too many cases less than it ought to be. At the same time the advance in moral and religious training has more than kept pace with that in intellectual discipline. The old roughness of manners has in great measure disappeared. . . . The boys are better lodged and cared for, and more attention is paid to their health and comfort. Among the services which [the public schools] have rendered is undoubtedly to be reckoned the maintenance of classical literature as the staple of English education, a service which far outweighs the error of having clung to these studies too exclusively. A second and greater still is the creation of a system of government and discipline for boys, the excellence of which is admitted to have been most important in its effects on national character and social life."<sup>1</sup> At the same time the Commissioners expressed the opinion that "in their course of study, sound and valuable in its main elements but wanting in breadth and flexibility, there are defects which destroy in many cases, and impair in all, its value as an education of the mind; and which are made more prominent at the present time by the extension of know-

<sup>1</sup> *Report of Public Schools Commission*, p. 56.

ledge in various directions and by the multiplied reforms of modern life. . . . We have been unable to resist the conclusion that these schools, in very different degrees, are too indulgent to idleness, or struggle ineffectually with it, and that they consequently send out a large proportion of men of idle habits and empty and uncultivated minds.”<sup>1</sup> In spite of the great emphasis which was laid on the Classics and the large proportion of the pupils’ time spent in the study of them, the results, even in these subjects, were in many cases most unsatisfactory; while the inferior status afforded to other subjects in the curriculum encouraged the idea that they were comparatively unimportant and less worthy of attention. A change of attitude was urgently needed. “A young man . . . is not well educated if all his information is shut up within one narrow circle.”<sup>2</sup>

The Commissioners advocated the reform of governing bodies and the remodelling of the curriculum on the lines of that of the German classical secondary school or *gymnasium*. Classics and religious instruction were still regarded as the chief studies of the public school, but mathematics, French or German, and some instruction in natural science and music or drawing should be included. The recommendations of the *Report* were followed up by the Public Schools Act of 1868, which applied to all the schools which had been investigated, with the exception of Merchant Taylors’ and St. Paul’s. By its provisions each school was required to submit a scheme for a new and more representative governing body. This body was given full powers with regard to school fees, the curriculum, and the appointment or dismissal of the headmaster. The latter was responsible to the governing body, but he had the right to appoint his assistant masters and they had no appeal to the governors from his decisions. The seven schools affected by the Act were attended by

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 55.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 30.

some 3,000 pupils—the élite of the country's youth, and their governing bodies administered an aggregate annual income of about £65,000. The schemes drawn up by these bodies were to be submitted to and approved by the Queen in Council, but there was to be no continued responsibility for the schools, and they were not liable to Government inspection. The policy adopted was one of decentralisation and each school remained virtually independent.

The Clarendon Commission was followed in 1864 by the Schools Inquiry Commission, under Lord Taunton's chairmanship, and it reported in 1868. Its business was to investigate the schools which had not been considered by the Newcastle and Clarendon Commissions—i.e. schools other than the elementary schools and the public schools. For the purposes of this Commission Matthew Arnold, son of Dr. Thomas Arnold and an inspector of schools, visited France, Germany, Switzerland, and Italy, and reported on their secondary education. Of the schools investigated by the Commissioners, nearly 800 were endowed and many were of great antiquity. They were not maintained by public moneys, either in the form of rate aid or of Government grant, and they were not proprietary—i.e. under private management. The administration of their endowments was quite outside the purview of the Education Department, and was the concern of the Charity Commission which had been set up in 1853. But the Taunton Commission also investigated 122 proprietary schools maintained by joint-stock companies. A number of schools of this type had recently come into existence. Some of these were day schools on the lines of Merchant Taylors' or St. Paul's; examples are University College School, originally founded in 1830 as London University School, and King's College School, dating from 1831. Others were boarding schools—e.g. Cheltenham (1841) and Malvern (1865). There were also the

Woodard Schools—as, for instance, Lancing and Hurstpierpoint, founded in 1849 and 1851—which were due to the enthusiasm of Nathaniel Woodard. His aim was to provide institutions on the lines of the older public schools, but with greater economy, and by such means to foster Tractarianism. Again, there were the ‘County Schools’ (not in the modern sense)—boarding schools with moderate fees for “the education of boys of the middle class on the public-school system.” West Buckland in Devon, and Dorchester, in Dorset, for example, had schools of this type, and the former still survives. These proprietary schools were not so expensive as the great public schools, and they tended to provide a more ‘modern’ education than the older endowed schools. The majority of the latter still by founders’ statutes had to give a classical education. But, with the exception of a few old grammar schools like Tonbridge, Repton, and Uppingham (under Thring), which had worked their way up to public-school rank and sent a fair number of boys to Oxford and Cambridge, most of the endowed schools served small towns or agricultural areas where a rigidly classical curriculum was useless.

Such, then, was the situation with which the Taunton Commissioners had to deal. Their *Report* was issued in twenty-one volumes, and it included a full account of the conditions found in each of the 942 schools which were visited. Their general findings and recommendations are given in the first volume of this *Report*. They advocated that three types of school should be made available, with the leaving ages of eighteen to nineteen, sixteen and fourteen respectively. The first would be for the sons of parents of ample means, or of good education but ‘confined means’; the second for boys whose parents’ means were ‘straightened,’ or who wished to enter professions requiring early special training (e.g. medicine, the Army, engineering); and the third



for the sons of "the smaller tenant farmers, the small tradesmen, the superior artisans."<sup>1</sup> This third type of school was regarded as "the most urgent educational need of the country." The distinction between the three kinds of school, which corresponded "roughly, but by no means exactly, to the gradations of society,"<sup>2</sup> was made by the curriculum recommended for each of them. It was felt that there should be no attempt to displace the Classics in the first-grade school, but that the course should be broadened so as to include mathematics, modern languages, and science. In fact, what was needed was more schools of the type of those investigated by the Clarendon Commission, but with a wider curriculum and lower fees. In the second grade of school, with a leaving age of sixteen, Latin at least should be retained, and to this should be added "a certain amount of thorough knowledge of those subjects which can be turned to practical use in business, English, arithmetic, the rudiments of mathematics beyond arithmetic, in some cases natural science, in some cases a modern language."<sup>3</sup> It appeared clear to the Commissioners that parents who would send their sons to schools of the third grade would not wish for a technical or vocational education. "On this point there was an almost unanimous agreement in favour of general education."<sup>4</sup> The subjects of instruction could be classified under the headings of language, mathematics, and natural science. There was some difference of opinion among the Commissioners as to whether Latin should be taught in the third-grade schools, but it was felt that one language other than English should be included in their curriculum. Mathematics and drawing are important, but some doubt is expressed as to whether Euclid is a good text-book for beginners. Natural science, if facilities and

<sup>1</sup> *Report*, vol. i, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 20.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 16.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 21.

skilled teaching are available, should form part of the course. In all three types of school alike religious instruction should be retained, but parents should have the right to withdraw their children from it should they wish to do so. The restriction of masterships to persons in holy orders should be abolished.

The *Report* goes on to discuss the organisation of secondary education. An 'Administrative Board' is needed as a central authority. This could be either a new body, or it might be constituted by enlarging the powers of the Charity Commission. It would deal mainly with educational endowments and would appoint "proper officers for the inspection of the endowed secondary schools."<sup>1</sup> There should also be in every Registrar-General's division<sup>2</sup> a 'provincial authority,' with an official district commissioner. He would inspect each endowed secondary school in his division at least once in every three years, and make a thorough report on it. Towns of 100,000 inhabitants, or over, might be allowed to "withdraw from the jurisdiction of the Provincial Boards and rank as provinces of themselves."<sup>3</sup> The individual schools would, of course, have their own governors who would fix the subjects of instruction, appoint the headmaster, and manage the endowment and expenses of the school. The management of secondary schools should be "in some reasonable measure" left under local control; but "in the internal management as a general rule the less the trustees interfere with the master the better."<sup>4</sup> It would be the duty of the provincial authority to decide the grade of each school in its area, and efficient private schools could be registered according to their grade, and officially inspected

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 634.

<sup>2</sup> The country had been divided up into eleven districts by the Registrar-General for the purpose of the census.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 643.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 644.

and examined. Parliament should regulate the purposes to which endowments should be applied, and there should be greatly increased provision for girls from this source. "The exclusion of girls from the benefit of Educational Endowments would be in the highest degree inexpedient and unjust."<sup>1</sup> At the same time, gratuitous instruction should be given only to such children as are most capable of profiting by it. On the question of school expenses, it was maintained that if education is made too cheap it will not be valued; but fees should be kept low and fixed by governors. The hostel system in boarding schools was regarded as preferable to 'houses' run by masters for their own profit.

In order that the schools should be efficient, the Commissioners made recommendations with regard to the qualifications of their staff and the examination of their pupils. Some means was needed whereby competent teachers could be discriminated from those who were incompetent. The profession should be made "attractive to men of ability"—and this implied better salaries. The Commissioners considered, but turned down, the proposal to set up an *École Normale*, on the French model; and they therefore discouraged any form of professional training which "would almost inevitably give the Government an undue control over all the superior education of the country."<sup>2</sup> But it was recommended that certificates of competence should be given to teachers after due examination, which should test "not the candidate's knowledge only, but whether his knowledge is adapted both in form and substance to the uses of his profession."<sup>3</sup> The list of those who had qualified for these certificates would form a 'scholastic register,' on the lines of the Medical Register, which had been instituted in 1858. It was further suggested that teachers should be superannuated at the age of sixty, or sixty-five.

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 567.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 613.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 614.

The efficiency of the teaching would also be tested by a system of periodic inspections and examinations of schools by the officers appointed by the central administrative board. The university local examinations and those of the College of Preceptors seemed "hardly easy enough to test the work of any large proportion of scholars";<sup>1</sup> and therefore each official inspector, aided by a panel of examiners, should test the schools in his district at some stated time which would not interfere with their normal time-tables. In order to standardise and regularise these examinations, there should be created a Council of Examinations, consisting of two members elected by each of the Universities of Oxford, Cambridge, and London, and six appointed by the Crown. They would nominate the examiners who formed the panel in each area presided over by the district Commissioner. This Council would also "make the necessary rules for the examination of candidates for the office of schoolmaster, appointing the examiners, and granting the certificates."<sup>2</sup>

The *Report* of the Schools Inquiry Commission is a document of the greatest interest because it contains many of the germs of the subsequent reorganisation of secondary education in this country. But those germs lay dormant for very many years, and the immediate effect of the Commissioners' four years of unremitting activity was very meagre. In 1869 Mr. Gladstone's Government passed the Endowed Schools Act. It gutted the *Report*. No local authorities were set up; there was to be no obligatory annual examination of pupils in endowed schools, although the Commissioners had said that this was "the pivot of all improvements" recommended by them; nor was there to be any registration of teachers. The Act confined itself to the problem of educational endowments. Three special En-

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 620.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 650.

dowed School Commissioners were appointed to initiate schemes for the better application of these; and provision was to be made, so far as was possible, for extending to girls the benefit of endowments. Public schools and elementary schools were outside the control of the Commissioners, and so were secondary-school endowments less than fifty years old unless the governing body of the school concerned consented. Pupils were to be withdrawn from religious instruction if their parents made this request in writing, and schoolmasters were not to be required to be in holy orders. The Commissioners got to work, and in the event they obtained parliamentary sanction for 902 schemes out of a total of 1,448 in the whole country.

The Public Schools Act of 1868 and the Endowed Schools Act of 1869 were far from realising to the full the recommendations of the Clarendon and Taunton Commissions. It can, however, be said that, as a result of them, most endowed secondary schools revived and the secondary education of girls was greatly stimulated. Some sort of "educational ladder"—a phrase coined by Huxley and appropriated by Forster—was set up, because some endowed schools had scholarships from elementary schools on the one side, and were beginning to send more and more pupils to the universities on the other. The curriculum, too, was broadened and teaching was improved. This had been fostered also by the institution of those local examinations to which the Schools Inquiry Commissioners had referred—those of the College of Preceptors (1853) and of Oxford and Cambridge (1858).<sup>1</sup> Yet the results were disappointing and the opportunity of setting up an organised system of secondary education was postponed for over thirty years. This was due largely to the aloofness of the wealthy and

<sup>1</sup> Candidates who passed the Oxford Senior Local (or 'Middle-Class') examination were granted the 'degree' of A.A. (Associate in Arts).

governing classes, and to the lack of any statesman to champion the cause of national education, as Brougham had done in the twenties. There was also a distrust of Government action on the part of those who still clung to the creed of individualism and *laissez-faire*. Headmasters, seeing the demoralising effects of 'payment by results' in the elementary schools, not unnaturally distrusted State interference in education. Moreover, there was not yet in existence an organised system of local government upon which the local control of education could be based; and there was no move to provide a body of Government inspectors of secondary schools who could co-operate with local authorities and governors of endowed schools in organising an educational system which would be adjusted to the needs of different districts.

## *Chapter XVI*

# THE DEVELOPMENT OF SCIENCE IN EDUCATION

The Science and Art Department. Herbert Spencer and T. H. Huxley.

UNIVERSITY reformers and those who wished to see more science taught in schools were interested rather in pure science than in the practical applications of the subject; though there were critics who compared unfavourably the facilities for scientific research at the English universities with those at the universities of Germany. But, as was pointed out in a previous chapter, the mechanics' institutes tried to put elementary scientific instruction within the reach of those who could apply it in their daily work as artisans or operatives. These institutes were, in fact, the forerunners of our modern technical education. As early as 1836 the Privy Council Committee of Trade (now the Board of Trade) had obtained a Government grant of £1,500 for a Normal School of Design—i.e. for the teaching of art as applied to commerce and industry. Other similar schools, aided by Government grants, were later established in the provinces. In 1842 an attempt was made to set up within the Royal Institution a school of practical chemistry which was to be named after Sir Humphry Davy. This failed, but in 1845 the Royal College of Chemistry, under the presidency of the Prince Consort, was opened. The Great Exhibition, held in 1851, disclosed the fact that in applied science Continental nations were ahead of us, and that there were many defects in British manufactures. In November of the same year an institution called 'The Government School of Mines and Science applied to the Arts' came into existence; and in 1852 a Department of Practical Art was established, which greatly improved the old Normal School of Design. A science division was added

to this in the following year, and it became the Science and Art Department of the Board of Trade. It was transferred to the newly formed Education Department in 1856. Meanwhile the Royal College of Chemistry and the Government School of Mines, after a period of amalgamation as the 'Metropolitan School of Science applied to Mining and the Arts,' were separated. They became what were known as the Royal College of Science and the Royal School of Mines, and were housed at South Kensington.

The Science and Art Department is important in the history of English education because, with the help of parliamentary grants, which it administered, it encouraged the teaching of science and art—and especially of science—throughout the country. These subsidies were known as 'South Kensington grants.' They were offered to school managers, teachers, and students who complied with the conditions laid down by the Department. At first the teaching of science, aided in this way, was carried on mainly in evening classes. In 1851 there had been only thirty-eight science classes, with 1,300 pupils, in the whole country; but by 1861 the numbers had risen to seventy science classes, with 2,543 pupils. The Department also instituted examinations for teachers, the first being held in 1859. Candidates who qualified could give science instruction in evening classes and were paid according to the number of their pupils who passed the examinations held by the Department. The weakness of the system lay in the fact that no arrangements were made for training these teachers. Thus there was a tendency for teachers who aimed at qualifying in science under the Science and Art Department to cram the subjects and to have little idea of their inherent educational value. Their chief aim was to secure a means of augmenting their meagre salaries, which were more meagre than ever after 1862, when 'payment by



results' was introduced into the elementary schools. All this tended to handicap the progress of science as a really educative school subject, and to make those who cared about education suspicious of the claims which were advanced on its behalf.

None the less, the scientific movement in schools and universities alike, as well as the general public interest in science, received great impetus from the writings of some contemporary scientists. Darwin's *Origin of Species* (1859) caused a good deal of perturbation in orthodox circles; but broad-minded churchmen like Charles Kingsley could find a fascination in science (as he showed in *Madame How and Lady Why*) and could make it part of their religion. Kingsley in this respect is not typical of the Church of England of the middle nineteenth century. From an educational point of view, the chief importance of the *Origin of Species* and the movement which it exemplified lies in the fact that they aroused an interest in science and helped to popularise the subject, and so strengthen the claim to include it in ordinary school education. The chief advocates of this claim are Herbert Spencer (1820-1903), and T. H. Huxley (1825-95). The former's case is the better known, but the latter's is the more balanced and reasonable.

Herbert Spencer was by profession an engineer, but he developed into a scientist, psychologist, sociologist, and philosopher. Between 1854 and 1859 he had written a series of magazine articles, which were published in book form in 1861, under the title *Education—Intellectual, Moral and Physical*. There was little that was original in the book, but it was very widely read, and it helped to arouse public opinion to the necessity for educational reform. In view of the influence which it has had, it seems desirable to give some analysis of it; but every student of English educational history should read the original work.

In his first chapter, Spencer asks: "What knowledge is of most worth?" He omits to say what he means by *worth* or to whom it is of 'most worth.' He asserts—and this would probably be generally granted—that "to prepare us for complete living is the function which education has to discharge";<sup>1</sup> and that the only rational means of judging of an educational course is to decide in what degree it discharges that function. This leads Spencer to classify in order of importance the leading types of activity which constitute human life. There are five of these: (i) those which minister directly to self-preservation; (ii) those which indirectly achieve this object by enabling a man to gain a livelihood; (iii) those which concern the bringing up of offspring; (iv) those which concern proper relations with other people—i.e. good citizenship; (v) those which occupy leisure. In preparation for these activities an education in 'science'—in a broad and rather undefined sense—seemed to Spencer the one object of primary importance. But he does not envisage the problem from the point of view of the child and his needs. For example, in reference to his first class of activities, he would have the child be given an acquaintance with the principles of physiology. This is doubtless an interesting study, but there is little evidence that it necessarily 'ministers directly to self-preservation.' One may ask whether doctors as a class are more healthy than farm-labourers, or whether those who know most about their internal arrangements are not often the greatest hypochondriacs. Again, as regards Spencer's second heading, we cannot anticipate the child's future occupation. We are told that mathematics should be taught, because it will be useful to the future carpenter, builder, surveyor, or railway constructor; chemistry for the future bleacher, dyer, and calico-printer; astronomy for the navigator; sociology for the industrialist; and Spencer goes on

<sup>1</sup> Spencer, *Education*, p. 9.

to say: "That which our school courses leave almost entirely out we thus find to be that which most nearly concerns the business of life. Our industries would cease were it not for the information which men begin to acquire, as best they may, after their education is said to be finished."<sup>1</sup> This is a specious argument, but it is still frequently repeated. The fact remains that the child is a child, and not an embryo engineer or calico-printer or navigator or business man. The history of technical education has illustrated the danger—or rather, the impossibility—of trying to base a training of this sort on an inadequate foundation of general education. This objection may be urged still more strongly in reference to Spencer's third class of activities—those connected with the bringing-up of offspring. He says that if an antiquary in the remote future were to look at a pile of our text-books or examination papers, he would say: "This must have been the curriculum for their celibates." To which one can only reply that children *are* celibates, and that it would be just as inappropriate to teach children the duties of parenthood as the fundamentals of a trade or profession. Of course, much depends on the age or type of the child under consideration; and, in prescribing his curriculum, this is a point upon which Spencer never seems to be clear.

The fourth class of activities in order of importance comprises those which teach good citizenship. Spencer criticises the contemporary school-teaching of history. "Familiarity with court intrigues, plots, usurpations, or the like, with all the personalities accompanying them, aids very little in elucidating the causes of national progress."<sup>2</sup> This is a criticism not of history as a school subject, but of a particular method of trying to teach history. But Spencer can see no good in it, and would replace it by what he calls

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 29.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 37.

'descriptive sociology'—"all the facts which help us to understand how a nation has grown and organised itself." These social phenomena can be understood only when the laws of life itself are understood. "Thus then," concludes Spencer, "for the regulation of this fourth division of human activities we are, as before, dependent on science." The argument is not very clear; there may be some justification for the statement that "Herbert Spencer put forward a number of unscientific arguments to support the demand for the teaching of science in schools." Finally Spencer deals with leisure-time activities. He himself was but little susceptible to the influence of art or æsthetics. He regards accomplishments, fine arts, *belles lettres* as the "efflorescence of civilisation which should be wholly subordinate to that instruction and discipline on which civilisation rests."<sup>1</sup> It may be questioned whether this is true as regards the child. Æsthetic culture and the appeal to the emotions are, as a matter of fact, peculiarly suited to the child in its early stages. With the young child dancing, music, and drawing are natural methods of self-expression and should be the staple of the curriculum rather than subordinated to the training of the reason. Spencer says that, as these things "occupy the leisure part of life, so should they occupy the leisure part of education." But it may be urged that their influence is not something apart from the rest of education, but rather that it affects one's whole attitude to life. The clash between the vast intellectual progress which science has made, and the barbarous uses to which the results of that advance have been put, is implicit in this criticism of Spencer's outlook. What most touches the affections and serves to implant worthy motives and high ideals is relegated to the least important category in education. The school if devoted, as Spencer seems to wish, to the inculcation of science and pure

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 47.

reason might be in danger of ceasing to be a place of sweetness and light and becoming instead a kind of mental gymnasium.

Someone has said that no treatise on education is complete without a gibe at Herbert Spencer; but it is only fair to set his views against their contemporary background. If we remember the curriculum of the public and grammar schools and of the elementary schools alike, we shall realise that there is much justification for his criticisms and claims. The fact that they were set out in so extravagant a fashion helped to call attention to them. Rousseau had done the same thing in his *Émile*. It is, in fact, generally true that reformers of all kinds have tended to overstate their case in order to emphasise it and draw attention to it.

Spencer's second chapter deals with method. He condemns learning by rote, of which there was far too much in the schools of his day, and he quotes Montaigne: "Sçavoir par cœur n'est pas sçavoir." The child should not be given the rule, but should make his own generalisations from the particulars which he observes—in short, he should act as a scientist does. "Children should be led to make their own investigations. They should be told as little as possible and induced to discover as much as possible." Again, early education should be made amusing and all education interesting. "Thus," says Spencer, "we are on the highway towards the doctrine, long ago enunciated by Pestalozzi; that alike in its order and its methods, education must conform to the natural process of mental evolution—that there is a certain sequence in which the faculties spontaneously develop, a certain kind of knowledge which each requires during its development; and that it is for us to ascertain their sequence and supply this knowledge."<sup>1</sup> Spencer seems to have studied Pestalozzi at second-hand through the

<sup>1</sup>*Op. cit.*, p. 79.

writings of a German named Biber; but it is a pity that he did not follow the Swiss educationist when he was writing his first chapter. He does not tell us what the natural order of development is; though we can hardly believe that he would seriously recommend the abstractions of comparative sociology or the details of how to bring up a family as the kind of knowledge naturally adapted to children who were to leave school at the age of twelve.

In his chapter on moral education Spencer puts forward the doctrine of the discipline of natural consequences which had been enunciated by Rousseau. It appeals to him as an advocate of scientific education because it emphasises the law of cause and effect; it also eliminates the personal element of authority and so removes a possible sense of injustice. Unfortunately 'natural discipline' sometimes visits a trivial offence with dire penalties; and in any case the value of such discipline depends on the child recognising clearly the causal connection between the sin and its punishment. Moreover, 'natural discipline' neglects the effect on other people. Happy, undeserving A may sin, but wretched, meritorious B may suffer as the result. In order to escape from the difficulties of this position, Spencer has to bring in the parent as a sympathetic friend who will advise and warn the child against the risks involved in this 'natural discipline'—and that is not discipline by natural consequences at all. But, apart from this, Spencer has some sensible things to say: parents should not expect moral precocity; they should be sparing of commands, but, having once commanded, should secure obedience. Their aim should be to make the child a self-controlling being, not a person governed by others.

Spencer's fourth chapter, which deals with physical education, is one of the most valuable parts of his treatise. He emphasises the superiority of spontaneous games over for-

mal gymnastic exercises, and he combats the contemporary idea that violent exercises are 'unladylike' for girls. There is a famous passage in which he contrasts the playground of a boys' school during break with that of an "establishment for young ladies."

It is justifiable, perhaps, to discuss the views of Herbert Spencer at some length, because his treatise, for all its illogicalities and inconsistencies, is one of the few really potent English books on education. It is not merely the plea of a scientist for a larger place for his subject in the school curriculum. It represents the progressive, individualistic, utilitarian, mid-Victorian point of view, which was highly critical of contemporary educational methods. There is no suggestion whatever that the State should play any part in the provision or administration of education. Spencer believes that the sanctity of the individual human being must be kept inviolate; and, sociologist though he is, he does not recognise an obligation on society to provide educational facilities by which that individuality may be given its fullest development.

The case for science in education was put with greater logic and restraint by T. H. Huxley. He had a wide knowledge of his subject; he had qualified in medicine, he had visited New Guinea on a scientific expedition, he was a geologist, a naturalist, and an anatomist, and he was well read in French and German scientific literature. As a teacher he was magnetic and his own personality did much to popularise the teaching of science. For many years he was intimately connected with the Science and Art Department; he was Dean of the Royal College of Science and secretary of the Royal Society. To him science was a great enthusiasm, to be preached not for its utilitarian value—for what it was 'worth'—but for its own sake. He proclaimed the grandeur of its subject-matter—"the great and fundamental truths of

nature and the laws of her operations"<sup>1</sup>—the greatness of the scientist's quest, the æsthetic pleasure and the spirit of adventure which scientific research affords, the value of the intellectual qualities which a study of science develops. That is an enthusiasm which anyone can share. Yet Huxley was no opponent of the humanities; they were not to him—as to Spencer—the mere frills and trimmings of a true education. But they must be truly *humanities*, and not simply a study of language and style—'gerund-grinding.' Thus Huxley was prepared to retain the Classics in the curriculum, if they were properly taught, but he would also include physical science (even in the elementary school), history, geography, English literature, drawing, and music. He declared himself in favour of "reading the Bible, with such grammatical, geographical, and historical explanations by a lay teacher as may be needful, with rigid exclusion of any further theological teaching than that contained in the Bible itself."<sup>2</sup> This is the Cowper-Temple clause in terms of the syllabus, and it is evident that Huxley had the newly formed board schools in mind; he was himself a member of the first London School Board. He justifies a system of compulsory elementary education and he advocates infant schools, continuation schools, and technical schools. He wishes to see an 'educational ladder' set up by the State; and in this he goes far beyond Herbert Spencer. But although the State provides the ladder, individuals must be left to make use of it through their own innate capacity, rather than be raised by State assistance into positions for which they are not really suited. Sir Michael Sadler says that Huxley "represents at its best a transitional phase in English speculation and practice in the sphere of ethics and politics."<sup>3</sup> He does indeed stand between the thoroughgoing individualism

<sup>1</sup> Huxley, *Collected Essays*, vol. iii, p. 87.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 398.

<sup>3</sup> Article on T. H. Huxley in Monroe's *Cyclopædia of Education*, vol. iii, p. 353.



and *laissez-faire* of the early-nineteenth century and the State socialism of a later age. His writings on education are not so well known or so widely read as Spencer's polemic; but his influence on actual school practice, in view of his work as an educational administrator, was probably greater.

## Chapter XVII

### MID-CENTURY THEORY AND PRACTICE

J. S. Mill, Matthew Arnold, Ruskin, F. D. Maurice, and Charles Kingsley.  
Edward Thring.

OUTSIDE the sphere of Royal Commissions and State interference there was a good deal of interest in education during the middle years of the nineteenth century. Among its chief exponents were John Stuart Mill, Matthew Arnold, Ruskin, Frederick Denison Maurice, and Charles Kingsley. Of each of them, therefore, something must be said.

J. S. Mill (1806-73), like Herbert Spencer, had no university training, and he never even went to school. He was a precocious child, and his education was conducted entirely by his father, James Mill. We can follow the process in the early chapters of his *Autobiography*. He began Greek at three, and Latin at eight. By the age of ten he had read all the usual classical authors and had also started mathematics. At twelve he was studying Aristotle and the Platonic dialogues. But James Mill took care that this should not be mere cramming. He shared his son's intellectual pursuits. They used to walk and discuss together, and the boy was encouraged to think problems out and to weigh evidence. He was given no religious training and grew up to be an agnostic; the elements of play and physical education also seem to have been lacking. We are not surprised that, after a régime like this, the younger Mill had a severe mental breakdown at the age of twenty, and did not recover until after a prolonged period of rest and foreign travel. He then entered the service of the East India Company, as an official at their London headquarters; but he seems to have had plenty of leisure, for much of his time was devoted to study and he wrote extensively. His interest in philosophy and political theory led him to express views on education. He was a

utilitarian and an individualist, but he does not—like Herbert Spencer—assign to the State no part at all in national education. In his essay *On Liberty* (1859), he says: “Is it not almost a self-evident axiom, that the State should require and compel the education, up to a certain standard, of every human being who is born its citizen?”<sup>1</sup> But that does not necessarily imply that the State itself should furnish the means of education. “If the Government would make up its mind to *require* for every child a good education, it might save itself the trouble of *providing* one. It might leave to parents to obtain the education where and how they pleased, and content itself with helping to pay the school fees of the poorer classes of children, and defraying the entire school expenses of those who have no one else to pay for them. The objections which are urged with reason against State education do not apply to the enforcement of education by the State, but to the State’s taking upon itself to direct that education: which is a totally different thing.”<sup>2</sup>

Mill’s most specific and best-known contribution to education is his *Inaugural Address* as Rector of St. Andrew’s University, delivered in 1867. On the vexed question of the position of science in education—which had recently been raised by Herbert Spencer—Mill asserted that there was no real antagonism between it and literary training. “If there were no more to be said than that scientific education teaches us to think, and literary education to express our thoughts, do we not require both?”<sup>3</sup> Using this ‘formal training’<sup>4</sup> argument, Mill advocates a full and complete education in both directions; mathematics and science must be included in the curriculum, as well as Latin and Greek; but he neglects modern languages, history, and geography—they can be

<sup>1</sup> Mill, *On Liberty*, chap. v.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> *James and J. S. Mill on Education* (ed. Cavenagh), p. 138.

<sup>4</sup> See *supra*, pp. 17–18.

acquired by 'private reading.' He condemns the schools of his time as inefficient shams; but he knew nothing of them at first hand and based his views on his interpretation of the reports of the Clarendon and Taunton Commissioners. He is more indulgent to the universities, for he says that "they are doing better work than they have done within human memory."<sup>1</sup> That is probably true, for there had been considerable improvement even before the Oxford and Cambridge Commissions of 1850, and the advance had continued. But here again, J. S. Mill knew the universities only from the outside, and he could hardly be impolite in a rectorial address. It remains true that he regards school and university alike as merely a 'teaching-shop' for purveying knowledge. They are not for him societies, living and developing organisms and sources of light and life. His attitude can be understood if one remembers his own upbringing.

Matthew Arnold (1822-88) was the eldest son of Thomas Arnold and brother-in-law of W. E. Forster. From 1851 to 1886 he was one of Her Majesty's Inspectors of Schools, and, in spite of his official position, he did not hesitate in his Reports from 1863 onwards to condemn the demoralising effects of the Revised Code.<sup>2</sup> For the purposes of both the Newcastle and the Taunton Commissions he investigated the state of education on the Continent of Europe, and he thus became a recognised authority on comparative education. He embodied the results of his observations in *Popular Education in France* (1861), *A French Eton* (1864), and *Higher Schools and Universities in Germany* (1868)—thus covering all aspects of his subject. His experience abroad impressed him with the inadequacy of middle-class schools in this country. The *lycée* or *collège* in France, and the *gymnasium* in Germany, were part of the national State system of education; and

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 187.

<sup>2</sup> See, for example, *Reports on Elementary Schools*, 1852-1882, pp. 91-8, 111-17, 123-37.

Arnold felt that there was need for State intervention to supply similar schools here. "Organise your secondary education" was his slogan. Many of his recommendations found their way into the Report of the Schools Inquiry Commission. These would have given us a national system of secondary education, but they were set aside by Parliament when the Endowed Schools Act of 1869 was passed. Thus in spite of Matthew Arnold's eminence as an educationist and his labours as an official, his direct influence on English education was not so great as it might have been and as it deserved to be.

Indirectly his influence was considerable. Distinguished as he was as an educational administrator, his fame rests mainly on his achievements as a poet and a man of letters. In *Culture and Anarchy* (1869) he sets forth his views on society, which he divides into 'barbarians, philistines, and populace.'<sup>1</sup> The 'barbarians' are the uneducated, or half-educated, aristocracy, the members of the Church, and the professional classes, who are hidebound by the traditions of their order or the 'old school tie'—the 'idols of the theatre.' The 'philistines' were the class with whom Arnold had had most contact as a school inspector. At this period the church schools of the National Society were visited by clerical inspectors, and the lay officials of the Education Department were restricted to schools of other denominations. Thus the 'philistines' formed the sort of society that one meets in the novels of Mark Rutherford. They were the uncultivated, narrow-minded bourgeois who were out to make money, and who judged the value of art and literature from the crudest utilitarian standpoint. Finally, the 'populace' is the vast residuum—"the working-class which, raw and half-developed, has long lain half-hidden amidst its poverty and squalor, and is now issuing from its hiding-

<sup>1</sup> M. Arnold, *Culture and Anarchy* (ed. Cavenagh), p. 98.

place to assert an Englishman's heaven-born privilege of doing as he likes, and is beginning to perplex us by marching where it likes, meeting where it likes, bawling what it likes, breaking what it likes."<sup>1</sup> These seemed to be the first-fruits of the Reform Act of 1867, which enfranchised the town workmen. Arnold "believed that order could only be ultimately secure when the whole people learnt self-discipline through culture—culture which 'seeks to do away with classes, to make the best that has been thought and known in the world current everywhere; to make all men live in an atmosphere of sweetness and light, where they may use ideas, as it uses them itself, freely,—nourished and not bound by them.'"<sup>2</sup> To that end we must work and organise. Arnold was a leader in the reaction against individualism. Contrasting our meagre educational activities with those of France, Germany, and other Continental nations, he would extend the State's functions in promoting collective well-being by means of public education. But he is critical of the contemporary scientific movement, and he insistently voices the need for a literary and humane element in the training of the workers and the middle classes. To quote his own words: "To have the power of using, which is the thing wished, these data of natural science, a man must, in general, have first been in measure *moralised*; and for moralising him it will be found not easy, I think, to dispense with those old agents letters, poetry, religion."<sup>3</sup> The need for 'moralising' scientific knowledge has been brought home to us with devastating clarity during recent years. How best that 'moralising' may be effected is perhaps still an unsolved problem.

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 105. In 1866 the mob had pulled down the railings of Hyde Park in an attempt to hold mass meetings there in support of the Reform.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. xxiv-v; and see p. 70.

<sup>3</sup> M. Arnold, *Reports on Elementary Schools*, 1852-1882, p. 178. See also Archer, *Secondary Education in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 188. Cf. also the poem *Steam and Electricity* in *Punch* of September 16th, 1857.

John Ruskin (1819-1900) was a prolific writer. None of his books treats specifically of education, but most of them contain many passages bearing on the subject. Most important from this point of view are *Unto this Last, Time and Tide*, and *Sesame and Lilies*. For twelve years Ruskin was Professor of Fine Art at Oxford, and he was actively associated with the Working Men's College in London. He was a destructive critic of the existing educational system, which seemed to him based on the principle of competition and to give a wrong outlook on life. To him Art was a moralising influence—not something apart and specialised, but a necessary part of the full development of human nature. It is essential to the full enjoyment of life and a natural medium of expressing oneself. "The right question to ask respecting all ornament is simply this—was it done with enjoyment—was the carver happy while he was about it?"<sup>1</sup> Thus to Ruskin Art is never merely a utilitarian accomplishment, but an essential instrument of education. It must be linked up, as it was in the Middle Ages, with craft, religion, and a love of nature. Handwork has a moral and educative value, and is no longer something 'banausic.' An education regarded in this way will help to break down class distinctions, and in *Unto this Last* (1860) Ruskin makes an appeal for a new social order based on justice and a recognition of the brotherhood of man. Hence he is led to demand free and compulsory State education which shall be an ethical, more than an intellectual, process. "It consists essentially in giving Habits of Mercy and Habits of Truth."<sup>2</sup> "The great leading error of modern times is the mistaking of erudition for education."<sup>3</sup> That was the error of J. S. Mill and the Revised Code and the current and growing belief in the virtue of examinations. To Ruskin education was "not a means to

<sup>1</sup> Ruskin, *The Seven Lamps of Architecture*, chap. v, § 24.

<sup>2</sup> *Idem*, *Time and Tide*, chap. xvi.

<sup>3</sup> *Idem*, *Stones of Venice*, vol. ii, appendix 7.

getting on in the world" but an end in itself. "The best elements of State Education should be calculated equally for the advantage of every order of person composing the State."<sup>1</sup> The laws of health should be taught so that the body may be "as beautiful and perfect as it can be." The whole atmosphere of the school should inculcate "the two great mental graces" of reverence and compassion—reverence by attaching it to the right persons and things, and compassion by "making it a point of honour so that it shall be held as shameful to have done a cruel thing as a cowardly one."<sup>2</sup> The teaching of truth as a habit will enter into all parts of education. The subjects of the curriculum will be such as may develop these noble virtues—poetry, music, history, natural science, and mathematics. Schools must be "in fresh country, and amidst fresh air, and have great extents of land attached to them in permanent estate."<sup>3</sup> The school buildings should be worthy of their purpose—architecturally beautiful, well planned and healthy, furnished with pictures and amply provided with good books. One is reminded of a very famous passage from Plato's *Republic*: "Then will our youth dwell in the land of health, amid fair sights and sounds, and receive the good in everything; and beauty, the effluence of fair works, shall flow into the eye and ear, like a health-giving breeze from a purer region, and insensibly draw the soul from earliest years into likeness and sympathy with the beauty of reason."<sup>4</sup> That also was Ruskin's attitude, and one can realise how bitterly he would hate the contemporary system of 'payment by results,' with its cramming of the three 'R's' and its illiberal outlook. We have by now become converted to so much of what Ruskin advocated, that it is easy to underestimate his importance as an educational reformer; but it is largely to

<sup>1</sup> Ruskin, *Time and Tide*, chap. xvi.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>4</sup> Plato, *Republic*, iii, 401.



his influence that we owe the development of art teaching in schools, interest in nature study, the extension of playgrounds and playing-fields, more imaginative methods of teaching history and literature, the realisation of the educational value of handicrafts, and the medical and physical care of school children.

F. D. Maurice (1805-72) belonged to a Unitarian family, but he became a Church of England clergyman and in 1840 was elected to the chair of English Literature and History at King's College, London. He formed a friendship with Charles Kingsley and with Thomas Hughes, the author of *Tom Brown's Schooldays*. His chief interest was in social reform. He believed in the principles of Chartism, but he wanted to Christianise the movement. This was the origin of 'Christian Socialism.' Maurice was also interested in the co-operative movement which had been originated by the Rochdale Pioneers in 1844.<sup>1</sup> He tried to start some co-operative industries—e.g. associations of tailors or bootmakers working together; but these were not successful. It therefore seemed to him that the principle of fellowship, expressed in a college where professional men and working men associated, might be more effective and would replace the superficial teaching of the mechanics' institutes. All this found expression in the foundation, in 1854, of the Working Men's College, in Red Lion Square. It still exists in Crown-dale Road, St. Pancras. Its aim was to establish an institute where working men could gain, not merely a technical equipment, but a higher, liberal education in the humanities, and where they might share a social life and intercourse such as that which characterised the older Universities. "The name *College* had a significance on which Maurice loved to dwell. . . . A college was an association of teachers and learners; and that was what Maurice desired the Work-

<sup>1</sup> See Trevelyan, *British History in the Nineteenth Century*, p. 277.

ing Men's College to be. It was not to be an institution to which the uneducated might resort, to pick up knowledge which might be of pecuniary benefit to them. The idea of fellowship was to run through all its work; every teacher was to assume that he might gain as well as impart, might learn as well as teach; every student was to be made to feel that in coming to the College he was entering into a society in which he might hope to become more of a citizen and more of a man."<sup>1</sup> The movement attracted some of the ablest leaders of contemporary thought and public life—Ruskin, Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Ford Madox Brown, C. Lowes Dickinson, Charles Kingsley, John Hullah. There was systematic class-teaching in such subjects as history, literature, science, mathematics, natural history, and art. There were social meetings and sing-songs. Gymnastics were popular, and "Mr. Hughes, on at least one night a week, met all comers with 'the gloves.'"<sup>2</sup> Cricket was played on Primrose Hill or at Gospel Oak, and there were country walks on Sundays—and even expeditions to North Wales and Switzerland—with much botanising, entomologising, or geologising *en route*. At the rise of the Volunteer movement in 1859 the College formed its own Corps and achieved a creditable record of service. The institution was so successful that other working men's colleges were established elsewhere in the country; but they did not achieve equal success, perhaps because they lacked so distinguished and effective a teaching personnel. Maurice's real importance, from our point of view, is that he put education in the forefront of social reform. Modern developments, such as the Workers' Educational Association and the University Extension movement, owe much to the pioneer work of F. D. Maurice.

<sup>1</sup> *The Working Men's College, 1854-1904*, pp. 10-11 (article by J. Llewelyn Davies).

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 73.

Charles Kingsley (1819-75), like Maurice, was a clergyman of the Established Church, and he was closely associated with Christian Socialism. He was an exponent of what Professor Archer calls the 'hygienic movement'; he advocated "sanitary and housing reform, the free sale of land and corresponding reform of the land laws, moral improvement of the family relations, public places of recreation."<sup>1</sup> A national system of education seemed to him the best method of achieving these ends, and he supported Forster's Bill of 1870. Like Spencer and Huxley, he was interested in science, but not from utilitarian or even cultural motives. He does not feel that the advances in scientific knowledge of the middle nineteenth century are a danger to theology, but rather that they amplify and illuminate our knowledge of God and His ways. Thus to Kingsley a knowledge of science is an important weapon in the hands of the social reformer. Outbreaks of cholera are not "acts of God" or punishments for national shortcomings. They can be, and ought to be, prevented by the dissemination of knowledge, in the school and elsewhere, as to how to deal with them. Kingsley, therefore, is not only allied with F. D. Maurice as a social reformer, but he also shows another aspect of the scientific movement in education.

The five educational theorists of the middle nineteenth century, whose views have been summarised in this chapter, agreed in criticising the narrowness or formalism of existing educational institutions—especially as it was expressed in the elementary-school system of 'payment by results.' Even Matthew Arnold could do only a little to mitigate that system in actual practice; and it was therefore more easy at the time to apply progressive theory in the sphere where State interference was least felt—i.e. in the secondary

<sup>1</sup> From T. Hughes's introduction to *Alton Locke*.

school. Most conspicuous of those who attempted to do this was Edward Thring (1821-87). He had been educated at Eton, where he experienced the horrors of 'long Chamber.'<sup>1</sup> He afterwards went up to King's College, Cambridge, and was ordained in 1846. He served as a curate at St. James's Church, Gloucester, and taught in the national school of the parish. He also acted as examiner at Eton and Rugby, and for the Classical Tripos at Cambridge in 1858.

After a period of private coaching at Marlow, which helped him (like Arnold at Laleham) to realise the importance of treating his pupils as individuals, he was appointed headmaster of Uppingham in 1853. It was at the time a country grammar school with twenty-five boys and two assistant masters. In spite of difficulties with an obstructive governing body, Thring rapidly raised Uppingham to the status of a public school with its numbers limited to about three hundred, so that the headmaster could know each boy individually. Financial problems were recurrent; but Thring was fortunate in his assistants, who helped him by building boarding-houses at their own expense and sharing the risks of the venture. He had tremendous driving force of personality—"the enthusiast, Mr. Thring", as Henry Sidgwick rather slightly called him. He believed that "every boy is good for something. If he can't write Iambics or excel in Latin prose, he has at least eyes and hands and ears. Turn him into the carpenter's shop, make him a botanist or a chemist, encourage him to express himself in music, and if he fails all round, here at least he shall learn to read in public his mother tongue and write thoughtfully an English essay." So the curriculum must be broadened. Compulsory subjects like Classics, English, and mathematics were taken in the morning; but in the afternoon there was a wide range of optional subjects from which

<sup>1</sup>See *supra*, pp. 22 and 91.

every boy could choose what interested him. These included modern languages, science, carpentry and metal-work, drawing and music. To the last-named subject Thring attached great importance, and with the help of one of his masters, Herr David, he built up a strong musical tradition in the school. He was a convinced believer in the educational value of organised games. He started his headmastership by taking part in a school cricket match and making fifteen "by some good swinging hits, to the great delight of my few pupils."<sup>1</sup> He also had a gymnasium built, besides workshops and laboratories. He stressed the value of organisation—"machinery," as he calls it. He realised what any experienced schoolmaster knows to be true—that a well-organised school tends to be a good school as regards tone and discipline. "There is a large percentage," he says, "of temptation, criminality, and idleness in the great schools—a moral miasma—generated by known causes, and as certainly to be got rid of even by mere mechanical improvements."<sup>2</sup> Therefore he believes in good buildings and equipment—the 'almighty wall,' as he calls it. "Never rest till you have got the almighty wall on your side, and not against you. Never rest till you have got all the fixed machinery for work, the best possible. The waste in the teacher's workshop is the lives of men."<sup>3</sup> He was fond of saying: "Honour the work, and the work will honour you"; and these are the words inscribed on a tablet to his memory in the school chapel at Uppingham.

Thring regarded teaching as a skilled craft, and he was anxious that teachers should be interested in method. He puts forward his own suggestions in *Education and School* (1864) and in *Theory and Practice of Teaching* (1883). But he did not advocate the establishment of training colleges for

<sup>1</sup> Parkin, *Life and Letters of Edward Thring*, p. 79.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 218.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

secondary-school masters, for he was apparently not impressed by those already in existence for elementary-school teachers. He was also violently opposed to the *Report* of the Schools Inquiry Commission. He regarded it as "the heaviest blow education could have received." It is obvious that he felt that the recommendations of the Commissioners would be inimical to the success of Uppingham.<sup>1</sup> This was due almost entirely to the hard work and financial sacrifices of himself and his staff, and not to the efforts of the governing body of the school. Thring even threatened to resign; but the Commissioners, recognising that his was a special case, gave way in large measure to him. But there was considerable alarm among some of the headmasters of endowed schools. While the Endowed Schools Bill was before Parliament, they held a meeting to consider the situation. Thring suggested that such a gathering should be held every year, and invited his fellow-headmasters to meet at Uppingham in December 1869. Thus was born the Headmasters' Conference, which rapidly increased in size and importance and has ever since represented the 'independent' schools and remained suspicious of State interference. Finally, it should be noted that Thring was a keen advocate of higher education for girls and women and that he was the first public-school headmaster to start a school mission in the East End of London.

Thring interests us, not only because of his vivid and dynamic personality, but also because he is an exponent in practice of much of the progressive educational theory of his time. Like Matthew Arnold, he hates the cramping routine of 'payment by results' and the formal, illiberal conception of education which it illustrates; like Ruskin, he believes in the ennobling influence of a beautiful and

<sup>1</sup> He had even made a formal protest in writing against the teaching in his school being inspected. See *Report*, vol. xvi, p. 133.

ordered environment, and in the educative value of craft-work, art, and music; like Maurice, he realises the social function of education and the obligations of the wealthier classes towards their poorer brethren; like Kingsley, he is an advocate of muscular Christianity. To him physical training and games are an essential element in education, and he is certainly an exponent of the 'hygienic' movement. When an epidemic of typhoid, due to bad drainage, broke out in Uppingham, Thring did his utmost to get the lethargic local authorities to put things right, and he even stirred up the Local Government Board to act in the matter. In order to safeguard the health of his boys meanwhile he evacuated the school to Borth, on the shores of Cardigan Bay; and it remained there a whole year (1876-7), until it could return with safety to its original home.

## Chapter XVIII

### THE EDUCATION OF GIRLS AND WOMEN

Queen's College and Bedford College. Women at Cambridge and Oxford. Miss Buss and Miss Beale. Secondary Schools for Girls. Co-education.

THE education of girls and women during the nineteenth century is not a self-contained subject. It is closely bound up with a larger movement which aimed at giving women greater economic and political freedom. It should be noticed that the educational side of this movement is concerned mainly with the daughters of the middle and upper classes—i.e. with university and secondary education. In the elementary system of the country girls had benefited equally with boys. This is true of private or common day schools, of monitorial schools and schools of industry, of national schools and British and Foreign schools, of board schools and voluntary schools. There was no question of female disabilities in this sphere of education, for girls had just as much—or, rather, just as little—chance as boys. But when one turns to secondary and higher education, the picture is a different one. The endowed schools and the Universities had been founded to ensure a sufficient supply of “fit persons to serve God in Church and State”; and it rarely seems to have occurred to pious founders that women could be included in that category. As late as the middle of the nineteenth century the Universities were closed to women, and there were no public schools and only a few endowed schools for girls. The Clergy Daughters' School at Cowan's Bridge had been founded in 1823 in an attempt to provide cheap education for girls; but if we may believe Charlotte Brontë, who was a pupil there,<sup>1</sup> the girls were badly fed and badly taught. Such private secondary schools as did exist were for the most part inefficient and pre-

<sup>1</sup> It is pilloried as ‘Lowood’ in *Jane Eyre*.



tentious—though there were exceptions. Many girls of the upper and middle classes did not attend a school, but were educated at home by governesses, often of Swiss, French, or German nationality—we meet them in the pages of contemporary novelists. There was little solidity or depth in the education which they gave.<sup>1</sup> Much stress was still laid on behaviour and deportment, but physical exercises and games were scouted. In fact, the real aim of a girl's education, so far as it went, was to make her superficially attractive because the only career open to her was marriage; any solidity of instruction or seriousness of intent in education would not "become a young woman," and the 'blue-stocking' was a familiar figure of ridicule or even horror.

However, a movement for reform was already stirring by the mid-century. It started from the direction of higher education, but it soon after affected secondary education. F. D. Maurice and Charles Kingsley were among the protagonists of the reform.<sup>2</sup> Maurice had a sister who was a governess. For this reason he became interested in the Governesses' Benevolent Institution, which had been founded in 1843 to aid governesses who needed financial assistance. Their Swiss and German rivals were in many cases equipped for their educational work by a special

<sup>1</sup>Cf. E. B. Browning, *Aurora Leigh*, bk. i:

"I learnt the royal genealogies  
Of Oviedo, the internal laws  
Of the Burmese empire,—by how many feet  
Mount Chimborazo outsoars Teneriffe,  
What navigable river joins itself  
To Lara, and what census of the year five  
Was taken at Klagenfurt—because she liked  
A general insight into useful facts. . . .  
I danced the polka and Cellarius,  
Spun glass, stuffed birds, and modelled flowers in wax,  
Because she liked accomplishments in girls."

The whole passage should be consulted.

<sup>2</sup> Ruskin also strongly advocated a better education for girls. See *Sesame and Lilies* 'Of Queens' Gardens,' especially §§ 80 and 81.

training and the possession of a teacher's diploma; and it was hoped, therefore, that the Institution might also hold examinations for some similar qualification. But the standard of educational attainment among potential candidates proved to be so low that it was evident that the first step would be to provide means for teaching the teachers. Maurice therefore enlisted the help of some of his brother professors at King's College, London, and as a result Queen's College was founded in Harley Street in 1848. It was rather loosely organised and did little more than provide courses of lectures. Pupils were admitted as young as fourteen, but on the other hand there were women students of mature years. There was an evident desire to allay possible apprehensions that women might be over-educated. "We are aware," said Maurice in his Inaugural Address, "that our pupils are not likely to advance far in mathematics, but we believe that if they learn really what they do learn, they will not have got what is dangerous, but what is safe. . . . I cannot conceive that a young lady can feel her mind in a more dangerous state than it was, because she has gained a truer glimpse into the conditions under which the world in which it has pleased God to place her actually exists."<sup>1</sup> In the summer of 1855 Maurice also ran a course of 'Lectures to Ladies on Practical Subjects' at the Working Men's College. In the introductory address, given by Maurice himself, he outlines a 'Plan of a Female College for the Help of the Rich and the Poor.' Other lectures dealt with hospital and dispensary work, the country parish and district visiting, workhouses, sanitation, the law as it affects the poor. Maurice seems to have aimed at establishing a training centre for women who would volunteer for social work among the poor and nursing—those were the days of

<sup>1</sup> From *Introductory Lecture on the Objects and Methods of Queen's College* (March 29th, 1848); quoted by Zimmern, *Renaissance of Girls' Education*, pp. 22-3.

Florence Nightingale. Such women would undertake the work done by sisterhoods in Roman Catholic countries. Here, therefore, as well as in teaching, there would be opportunities of service to the community open to educated women.

Meanwhile, in 1849, Queen's College had been followed by another college of the more orthodox type—Bedford—which was established in London and endowed by Mrs. Reid. It was an undenominational institution, and it took University College, London, as its model. In 1869, the year when Bedford College received its charter, the University of Cambridge instituted a Higher Local examination, open only to women candidates over the age of eighteen. This gave the students of such colleges as Bedford and Queen's something to aim at; for as yet there were no degrees open to women. In 1862, however, a proposal had been made to alter the charter of London University so as to admit women to graduation, and it was lost only by the casting vote of the Chancellor. But Miss Emily Davies, who was a doughty champion of the education of women and girls, and who had been secretary of a committee which aimed at securing the admission of women to university examinations, succeeded in starting a women's college in a house at Hitchin (1869) and induced the University of Cambridge to let her students work degree papers. Three years after the opening of the institution three of its students had fulfilled the conditions required by the University for an honours degree, and all those who entered for the test of the previous examination attained the pass standard. In 1873 Miss Davies's college was moved from Hitchin to Girton, two miles from Cambridge, and the foundress became its first 'mistress.'

Side by side with Miss Emily Davies another pioneer was at work. Miss A. J. Clough, who had already run schools at Liverpool and Ambleside, was trying to organise courses of

lectures for women, given by university teachers, in various big towns in the North of England. It was an adumbration of the University Extension movement. Out of this grew a 'North of England Council for promoting the Higher Education of Women,' of which Miss Clough became the secretary. Finally, with the help of the Cambridge philosopher, Henry Sidgwick, Miss Clough took charge of a house of residence for women students in the University town; and this became the germ of Newnham College, Cambridge, which was opened in 1875, with Miss Clough as its first principal. Its aims were rather different from those of Girton. Miss Davies wished her students to be admitted to the ordinary university examinations under the same conditions as the men; there should be no special examination or lower standard for women. But at Newnham there were special courses designed for women only and intended specifically to advance feminine culture. If the students took an examination, it would be the Cambridge Higher Local—a kind of inferior female substitute for the degree examinations which were open to men undergraduates only. Girton's point of view prevailed, and Newnham eventually adopted it. Women's claim to share the highest university studies with men was abundantly justified when students from their colleges could be bracketed equal with the senior classic or the senior wrangler. The force of this argument was too strong to be disregarded. In 1881 the Senate of the University of Cambridge formally admitted women students from Girton and Newnham to the Previous and Tripos examinations; a separate pass list was published and certificates were awarded to successful candidates. They were not, however, admitted to degrees or allowed to take the examinations for the ordinary degree.

The movement for the university education of women,

so conspicuous at Cambridge, was gathering force elsewhere. In Oxford an 'Association for the Education of Women' had been founded with the object of "establishing and maintaining a system of instruction having general reference to the Oxford examinations."<sup>1</sup> The outcome was the foundation of Somerville College and Lady Margaret Hall, both of which date from 1879. St. Hugh's (1886) and St. Hilda's (1893) were subsequently added. Meanwhile, in 1878, London University, which was an examining and not a teaching body, at last opened its degrees to women. As a concession to popular sentiment the first 'graduettes' made their own hoods. When, between 1880 and 1887, the federal Victoria University was formed from the union of Owens College, Manchester, and Yorkshire College, Leeds, it was permitted by its charter to admit women, as well as men, to degrees. In 1892 the four Scottish Universities followed suit, and so did the federal University of Wales in 1893. Their example has since been copied by Trinity College, Dublin, and all the newer English universities. It was not until 1920 that Oxford admitted women students to full university status. They are eligible under the same conditions as men to be members of Convocation and Congregation, of the Hebdomadal Council, and of any university board or committee. They can act as university examiners and hold university fellowships and scholarships. It is curious that Cambridge, where the main battle for the university education of women was fought and won, should be the only British university which still refuses full academic status to women and grants them merely a 'titular' degree.

We have now to trace the development of the secondary education of girls. Here again progress was due primarily to the determination of a few women of outstanding per-

<sup>1</sup> See A. M. A. H. Rogers, *Degrees by Degrees*, chap. i.

sonality. Frances Mary Buss (1827-95) began her career as a teacher in a private school run by her mother. She also attended evening lectures at Queen's College. Her school increased rapidly in numbers and developed into the North London Collegiate School. Although still a private venture, it was put under the superintendence of the vicar and clergy of St. Pancras; but in 1871 Miss Buss transferred her property in the school to a body of trustees and it thus acquired a 'public' character. At Queen's College she was contemporary with another pioneer of girls' education—Dorothea Beale (1831-1906).<sup>1</sup> Miss Beale remained at Queen's College giving some help in the teaching of mathematics; but after a not very happy year on the staff of the Clergy Daughters' School she was appointed, in 1858, headmistress of Cheltenham Ladies' College, which had been founded five years previously. Cheltenham was already becoming a favourite place of residence for retired people in easy circumstances, who sent their boys to Cheltenham College, which dates from 1841. But they had daughters as well as sons, and the Ladies' College was a kind of female counterpart of the boys' school, just as Queen's and Bedford had found their prototypes in King's and University. Miss Beale realised that girls, no less than boys, needed a solid education; it was not for nothing that she had been a tutor in mathematics. At first there were difficulties; parents objected to the thoroughness of the teaching and well-qualified mistresses were hard to come by. But Miss Beale won through. She had not merely a keen intellect, but also a deep religious sense and great ability as a teacher. All this in due course bore fruit abundantly. By 1864 there were 130 pupils and a boarding-house had been opened; by 1883 there were 500 girls and ten boarding-houses. Miss Beale

<sup>1</sup> They did not actually meet till many years later—see her letter to Sir Joshua Fitch in Raikes, *Dorothea Beale of Cheltenham*, p. 413.

lived to see Cheltenham developed into an educational institution which was far more than a secondary school. It comprises several departments, all under the direction of the Principal. One of them prepares senior students for school and higher certificates, and university scholarships. Below this is a secondary school for girls between the ages of twelve and sixteen. Below this again are junior departments and a kindergarten. Thus the whole range of education is covered in one and the same institution. Moreover, St. Hilda's College was founded primarily as a hall of residence for those old girls of Cheltenham who wished to proceed to Oxford. The institution as a whole, though it has since in some respects been imitated, was without precedent in our educational history.

It was not only through the example of their schools that the influence of Miss Beale and Miss Buss was felt. When the Schools Inquiry Commission was investigating the provision of education for girls, they were both invited to give evidence before it; and Miss Davies was also interrogated. They made the most of their opportunity. Eight Commissioners also investigated the girls' schools in selected districts. Their conclusions emphasise the value of the work upon which Miss Beale and Miss Buss were engaged. "It cannot be denied," says the *Report* of the Commission, "that the picture brought before us of the state of Middle-Class Female Education is, on the whole, unfavourable. The general deficiency in girls' education is stated with the utmost confidence, and with entire agreement, with whatever difference of words, by many witnesses of authority. Want of thoroughness and foundation; want of system; slovenliness and showy superficiality; inattention to rudiments; undue time given to accomplishments, and those not taught intelligently or in any scientific manner; want of organisation—these may sufficiently indicate the character of the

complaints we have received in their most general aspect.”<sup>1</sup> One of the Commissioners adds: “We find, as a rule, a very small amount of professional skill, an inferior set of school-books, a vast deal of uninteresting task work, rules put into the memory with no explanation of their principles, no system of examination worthy of the name, a very false estimate of the relative value of the several kinds of acquirement, a reference to effect rather than to solid worth, a tendency to fill or adorn rather than strengthen the mind.”<sup>2</sup> The blame lies largely with the parents, who tend to believe that “girls are less capable of mental cultivation, and less in need of it, than boys; that accomplishments, and what is showy and superficially attractive, are what is really essential for them; and in particular, that as regards their relations with the other sex and the probabilities of marriage, more solid attainments are actually disadvantageous rather than the reverse.”<sup>3</sup> It was therefore recommended that “in every town large enough to be worthy of a grammar school” there should also be a day school for girls under public management and with moderate fees. A more solid course of instruction should be adopted, including mathematics and, where possible, Latin. Moreover, there should be institutions “designed to hold, in relation to girls’ schools and home training, a position analogous to that occupied by the Universities towards the public schools for boys.”<sup>4</sup> This would make possible an adequate supply of properly qualified women teachers. “It is from the advent of more highly educated teachers that the first improvement in the education of girls is to be hoped for.”

The agitation for an improvement in, and greater facilities for, the secondary education of girls led to a clause in

<sup>1</sup> Report of *Schools Inquiry Commission*, vol. i, pp. 548-9.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 552.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 546-7.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 562; and see also ‘Memorial’ in vol. ii, pp. 194-7.



the Endowed Schools Act of 1869, which laid it down that "in framing schemes under this Act, provision shall be made as far as conveniently may be for extending to girls the benefits of endowments."<sup>1</sup> Miss Alice Zimmern calls this clause 'the Magna Carta of girls' education.' To facilitate this requirement of the Act there was formed an Association for Promoting the Application of Endowments to the Education of Women. It offered to assist trustees of schools and other persons interested in education, by supplying information and suggesting plans whereby available funds might best be applied to the education of women. Obviously, it was the girls of the middle classes who most needed educational facilities, because the passing of the 1870 Act brought State-aided schooling within the reach of the poorer children of both sexes indiscriminately. Where, therefore, the funds of educational trusts were not exhausted by existing boys' schools, new schools for girls were set up, or old ones revived, out of the surplus. One of the first was at Bradford, where part of the old grammar-school endowment was appropriated "to supply a liberal education for girls by means of a school or schools within the borough of Bradford." That is typical. Similar schools were founded at Bedford, Birmingham, Rochester, and many another town, large and small. St. Olave's and Dulwich saw the rise of sister schools on the same foundation. Christ's Hospital, though definitely founded in the time of King Edward VI for the benefit of children of either sex, was educating only twenty-two girls<sup>2</sup> as against 1,224 boys when it was investigated by the Schools Inquiry Commissioners in 1865. In spite of the Act of 1869, there was some delay in putting into operation a long-overdue reform of the foundation; and even to this day fewer girls than boys benefit from it.

<sup>1</sup> Endowed Schools Act, 1869, § 12.

<sup>2</sup> The number dropped to eighteen in 1867.

The Endowed Schools Commission worked slowly—perhaps this was inevitable—and many of the schemes took some time to put into operation. This stimulated private enterprise to step in in order to supplement its efforts, which in any case were limited to existing endowments. One of the outstanding figures in this field of activity was Maria Grey (Mrs. William Grey), who had been a candidate for election to the newly formed London School Board and who was secretary of the Women's Educational Union.<sup>1</sup> In 1872 this body put forward a scheme for a "Public Day School for Girls, in the South-Western district of London, the funds for which will be raised in shares of £5 each, by means of a limited liability Company, capable of extending its operations hereafter in various directions, wheresoever schools are wanted."<sup>2</sup> This was the origin of the Girls' Public Day School Trust. It was a commercial, as well as an educational venture, though its dividends have never been high. The aim was to make the building and running of the schools "absolutely self-supporting." The movement rapidly gathered strength, and it secured an imposing number of illustrious supporters under the presidency and patronage of Princess Louise, fourth daughter of Queen Victoria. The first school was opened at Chelsea,<sup>3</sup> and it started work early in 1873. Another school at Croydon followed in 1874. By 1891 thirty-six Girls' Public Day Schools had been founded, and they were situated, not only in London and its neighbourhood, but also in many of the chief provincial towns of England. They did not all survive, but twenty-three of them still carry on the work. They were modelled to some extent on Miss Buss's North

<sup>1</sup> Its full title was 'The National Union for the Education of Girls of all Classes above the Elementary'—i.e. those for whom provision had not been made by the Act of 1870. See Magnus, *Jubilee Book of the G.P.D.S.T.*, p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Magnus, *Jubilee Book of the G.P.D.S.T.*, 1873-1923, p. 16.

<sup>3</sup> Its site was afterwards changed, and it is now the Kensington High School.

London Collegiate School; and they also adopted a scheme initiated by Miss Beale at Cheltenham—that of having the main lessons in the morning, and giving up the afternoon to what are still sometimes regarded as ‘extras’—e.g. music and art. Kindergarten work has also been an integral part of the business of the G.P.D.S.T. schools; while the Clapham High School also organised courses of training for teachers. A similar trust to promote the secondary education of girls, but on definitely Church of England lines, was the Church Schools Company, started in 1883. It was less successful than its prototype, but it still exists and maintains seven schools.

One of the by-products of the extension of schooling for girls has been a development of co-education in the field of secondary education. At the time of the Schools Inquiry Commission there was already in existence at Upholland, in Lancashire, a small endowed school which had girls as well as boys among its pupils; but the *Report* comments on this arrangement as being most unusual. Private co-educational schools for middle-class children were not unknown as early as the fifties and sixties of last century. In 1873 Lady Barn, one of the most interesting and effective schools of this type, was founded on the outskirts of Manchester by W. H. Herford and his wife.<sup>1</sup> The existence of such schools as these gave a filip to the foundation of new mixed secondary schools. Especially after the Act of 1902, local authorities found that they were cheaper and more efficiently run in areas of small or scattered population than two small separate schools for boys and for girls. By 1919, out of 1,080 secondary schools recognised as efficient, 224 were mixed. It is only after the event that educational administrators tend to justify co-educational schools on the grounds of high principle; but it should be remembered

<sup>1</sup> See Hicks, *Lady Barn House and the Work of W. H. Herford*.

that co-education has always been practised to a greater or less degree in the elementary schools of this country, and no one has shown undue alarm. Its advance in the sphere of secondary education within recent years has been due not simply to financial considerations on the part of local authorities, but also to the private enterprise of those who believed in it on educational grounds.<sup>1</sup> We now even have schools like Bedales (near Petersfield), St. George's, Harpenden, and Frensham Heights, organised on public-school lines as boarding schools for both boys and girls up to the age of eighteen.

<sup>1</sup> An account of some of the more important co-educational 'progressive' schools is given in *The Modern Schools Handbook* (ed. Blewitt).

*PART D*

EDUCATION DURING THE LATTER PART OF  
THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

## *Chapter XIX*

### ELEMENTARY EDUCATION DURING THE SCHOOL BOARD PERIOD

Progress of the School Boards. The Sandon and Mundella Acts. The Influence of Froebel. The Cross Commission.

WE turn now to elementary education which we left at the passing of the 1870 Act. This, as has been said, was a compromise, because it accepted the existing voluntary system and 'filled up the gaps' by providing secular schools where they were needed. Most of the school boards followed the example of the London School Board in making undenominational Bible teaching compulsory, on the lines suggested by Huxley, though they were not bound by the Act even to do this. Thus the 'religious difficulty' still continued and was emphasised by the triennial school board elections, which were often fought out with great bitterness. The provision of places in voluntary schools was greater than in board schools, though each was stimulated by the rivalry of the other. In 1880, out of 17,614 elementary schools, 14,181 were voluntary and 3,433 under school boards; but the board schools tended to be better equipped, larger, and more efficient, and the voluntary schools found the strain of competing with institutions aided by the rates heavier and heavier. The disproportion gradually decreased, but as late as 1897 the number of children in voluntary schools outnumbered those in board schools; and by 1900 they were still 46 per cent. of the total elementary-school population.

The 1870 Act had not made education compulsory, though it had compelled the school boards to provide schools where there were 'gaps.' School fees were still to be paid, but the Act had given school boards the power—if they wished to use it—to compel attendance by making

by-laws to this effect. Fees of necessitous children could be remitted. Thus there remained the point of controversy as to whether elementary education should be universally enforced. The London School Board, soon after its formation, passed a by-law for compulsory school attendance of children between the ages of five and thirteen, with exemption to children over ten, who had passed Standard V, and half-time exemption to younger children who were adjudged to be 'beneficially and necessarily at work.' Other school boards in the large towns passed similar by-laws, but the country school boards were reluctant to apply compulsion. By 1876 50 per cent. of the whole population was under compulsion, but in the boroughs the percentage was as high as 84. It should be remembered that a series of Factory and Mines Acts had for some time past made a modicum of school attendance a compulsory condition of the employment of children. The Factory Act of 1844, which was still in force in 1870, made it possible for children over the age of eight to be employed in factories and workshops half-time; when they reached the age of thirteen they could become full-time workers. A Factory Act of 1874 raised these ages to ten and fourteen. Thus for children below these ages and in employment education was compulsory, though no standard of education was prescribed. It was an unsatisfactory and confusing situation. A Factory and Workshops Act Commission, which reported in 1876, expressed the view that special legislation for the benefit of factory children was bound to be unsatisfactory; and it went on to say: "We consider that justice, expediency, and consistency alike require that the attendance at school of all children should be enforced by law, whether they are at work or not."<sup>1</sup> The problem of irregular attendance was also involved. The Act of 1870

<sup>1</sup> *Report of Factory and Workshops Act Commission* (1876), lvii.

had empowered school boards to appoint officers to enforce school attendance in areas where by-laws to this effect had been made. Lord Sandon's Act of 1876 set up school attendance committees in districts where there were no school boards. It also laid upon the parent the duty of seeing that his child should receive "efficient elementary instruction in reading, writing, and arithmetic";<sup>1</sup> penalties for neglect were provided. Thus the Act did imply compulsory education, although it did not compel the parent to send his child to school. At the same time it forbade the employment of any child under the age of ten, or of any between ten and fourteen, who had not reached certain specified educational attainments.<sup>2</sup> But there were loopholes. Children living more than two miles from a public elementary school were exempt from the provisions of the Act, and in rural areas they could be excused from attendance at school for a period up to six weeks in order to help with agricultural work. The employment of children out of school hours was also not forbidden. Sandon's Act increased the Education Department's grant so as to make it possible for voluntary schools to meet the increasing cost of education. It was followed by Mundella's Act of 1880, which compelled all school boards and school attendance committees which had not already framed by-laws to enforce compulsory attendance to repair the omission. By it school attendance was made obligatory for all children between the ages of five and ten. Exemptions based on proficiency or attendance could be obtained up to fourteen. Thus the question of compulsion was at last settled, but fees were not at the same time entirely abolished and school pence continued in some cases to be paid, especially in the voluntary schools. With the introduction

<sup>1</sup> *Elementary Education Act*, 1876, § 4.

<sup>2</sup> Standards of proficiency in the three 'R's' for the purpose of a certificate enabling a child to be employed were laid down in the First Schedule to the Act.



of compulsory schooling, it naturally became increasingly difficult to collect them. In 1891, therefore, a special fee-grant of 10s. a head was introduced, and this measure made elementary education virtually free; other provisions secured that there should be no areas which were entirely without free schools. The Fisher Act of 1918 finally and definitely abolished fees in elementary schools.

The evolution of a system of compulsory and gratuitous education is of great importance, but its significance should not be overestimated. Its value depends on the connotation given to the term 'education.' Even after the Mundella Act, the exemption by-laws varied considerably from one district to another. Standards of proficiency also varied; in some areas compulsory attendance ended at the age of ten, elsewhere at eleven or twelve. It was not always easy for officials to check irregular attendance, and in some cases children even succeeded in leaving school before the prescribed age. Truancy also was rife in some quarters, and, as grants were calculated partly on a basis of attendance, there was a temptation to teachers to falsify registers. 'Payment by results' did not disappear until 1897, but even as early as the seventies some modifications were made in the Code, and these somewhat mitigated its harshness. In 1875 children were allowed to qualify for grant on the result of examination, not only in 'obligatory' subjects—the three 'R's'—but also in 'class' subjects taught throughout the school above Standard I. These included, for example, history, geography, and elementary science. Later the examination in obligatory subjects was required only of sample groups comprising not less than a third of the pupils of a school; while in 1895 even this attenuated form of examination was replaced by an inspection. But so long as it lasted—and particularly in its earlier days—the system had deleterious effects, and education in voluntary and board schools alike suffered by

it. The passing of the 1870, 1876, and 1880 Acts had caused a large influx of new pupils into the elementary schools. Many of these children were utterly ignorant. They clogged up the schools and yet had to be coached and crammed for grant-earning purposes, instead of being dealt with according to their needs. All this encouraged mechanical rote-teaching. Moreover, the Revised Code of 1862 had cut off a supply of well-trained pupil-teachers, and that implied a deterioration in the quality of the teaching staff in elementary schools. The actual proportion of pupils who managed to qualify for grant even in the three 'R's' was surprisingly small; it was about 25 per cent. of those examined in 1874 and roughly the same in 1880.

None the less, there was some gradual improvement in the education given in public elementary schools. The general level of work was raised, and in 1882 a Seventh Standard was added. The Code of that year also assessed grants on the average attendance of a school and not on individual pupils. The method by which the total amount was estimated is rather complicated, but the sum included a fixed grant and a 'merit' grant. This latter was decided by the inspector's report of 'fair,' 'good,' or 'excellent,' "in respect of (1) the organisation and discipline; (2) the intelligence employed in instruction; and (3) the general quality of the work, especially in the elementary subjects." The bulk of the grant still depended on the examination results together with the 'merit' grant, which itself was in practice estimated largely by the examination; but a separate arrangement was made for infant schools where examination determined only a small proportion of the grant. The general result of these measures was that a well-supported and well-staffed school could earn high grants; but a poor school, with irregular attendance and inferior teachers, could qualify only for low grants and was therefore doubly

penalised. The board schools, which could rely on rate aid, were as a rule in a stronger position than the voluntary schools. The best teachers tended to go to the board schools because these could offer better pay, and this was one reason for hostility towards such schools on the part of the supporters of voluntarism. It is also true to say that in spite of its amendments the 1882 Code made for formalism in the schools for older children, but this was less marked in the infant schools because the system of 'payment by results' was less potent in them.

There was another influence which was beginning to affect the education of younger children. It was due to Froebel, whose educational principles—often, perhaps, much misunderstood—began to be applied in English schools from about the seventies onwards. Froebel (1782–1852) was a German and a disciple, though not an uncritical one, of Pestalozzi. To him the child is an organism, and education is the development of that organism. "The vigorous and complete development and cultivation of each successive stage depends on the vigorous, complete, and characteristic development of each and all preceding stages of life."<sup>1</sup> This development is spontaneous; Froebel calls it "self-activity." Pestalozzi in his doctrine of *Anschauung*<sup>2</sup> had over-emphasised receptivity; Froebel insists that observation must be combined with free expression. Thus the educator's part is not to interfere and prescribe, but to oversee and protect. The child's natural activity expresses itself in play. Thus childhood's play is not mere sport or amusement; it is full of meaning and serious import. "The plays of childhood are the germinal leaves of all later life. Play is the purest, most spiritual activity of man at this stage, and, at the same time, typical of human life as a whole

<sup>1</sup> Froebel, *The Education of Man* (trans. Hailmann), p. 28.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, p. 45.

—of the inner hidden natural life in man and all things.” To Froebel the school’s function is to encourage this natural development, and his view is illustrated by the name he gave to it—the *Kindergarten*. This does not mean, as seems sometimes to be assumed, a garden in which the children play, but one in which the children are the plants, and where the teacher is the gardener who helps them to develop most effectively along the lines laid down by nature and not by the gardener himself. To encourage self-expression through play, Froebel introduced certain pieces of apparatus which he called ‘gifts’ and for which he claimed virtues which they probably do not possess.

As early as 1854 a private kindergarten was started in Bloomsbury by one of Froebel’s disciples. The movement progressed very slowly, but during the next twenty years a few more schools of the type were opened in other parts of London and in some of the provincial towns. They were confined to children of well-to-do parents. But in 1874 a Froebel Society was founded, largely through the instrumentality of Maria Grey, who had done so much to bring the Girls’ Public Day Schools into existence. A kindergarten was attached to one of these schools—the Croydon High School—and before long a department of this kind became an essential part of every school belonging to the Trust. The movement now spread rapidly. Kindergartens—or schools calling themselves by this name—were largely private schools for the young children of middle- and upper-class parents who were unwilling to send them to the public elementary schools. They varied very greatly in efficiency, but (as the writer can testify from personal experience) some were very good, and Froebelianism, however misunderstood, was the basis of their work and organisation. But it was less easily adaptable to the conditions in the in-

<sup>1</sup> *The Education of Man*, p. 55.

fants' departments of public elementary schools, even after they had been delivered from the worst effects of 'payment by results.' There, as Adamson says, "Froebelianism remained a misunderstood exotic."<sup>1</sup> The main business of such schools was still to teach the three 'R's.' 'Kindergarten' appeared on time-tables as a kind of extra subject, alongside of the more orthodox ones, in order to brighten the curriculum and afford some relief. That, of course, was very far from what Froebel intended. Writing early in the present century, Raymont says: "We do him a very questionable honour when we start children of four or five along the uninviting paths that lead to mastery of the three 'R's,' reserving a place in the time-table for exercises labelled 'Kindergarten' . . . When [the infant school and the private kindergarten] place the stress on teaching rather than on physical and moral culture, and when they are conducted by persons unacquainted with the true principles of infant training, their value resides chiefly in the fact that they keep the children out of worse mischief."<sup>2</sup> Nevertheless, Froebelianism, even where it was misunderstood and misapplied, brought something of value into the education of young children. There were happy and progressive infant schools even in the eighties of last century. As the principles which Froebel enunciated have been better understood, more carefully developed, and more completely applied, such schools have been multiplied. Today our infant schools form one of the most effective and encouraging parts of the English educational system.

In 1886 a Royal Commission, with Sir Richard Cross (afterwards Lord Cross) as chairman, was appointed to take stock of the working of elementary education since the 1870 Act. In 1888 it issued a majority and a minority

<sup>1</sup> Adamson, *English Education*, 1760-1902, p. 340.

<sup>2</sup> Raymont, *The Principles of Education*, p. 31.

report; but although there was noticeable difference of opinion, a considerable measure of agreement was secured on some important points. The Commissioners say that they "are unanimously of opinion that the present system of 'payment by results' is carried too far and is too rigidly applied, and that it ought to be modified and relaxed in the interests equally of the scholars, of the teachers, and of education itself."<sup>1</sup> Both parties feel that there should be an extension of "school provision, with better buildings and adequate playgrounds. The age limit for exemption from attendance should also be raised. There should be greater facilities for the training of teachers; training departments should be established in university colleges and day students admitted to training colleges. The inspectorate should be opened to elementary-school teachers. More stress should be given to science teaching and to manual and technical instruction. It was on the religious issue that the division of opinion between the two *Reports* was largely manifested. The majority were supporters of the voluntary system. They urged that voluntary effort should have equal right with the school boards to "fill up the gaps," and that, in order to achieve this, voluntary schools should be aided from the rates.<sup>2</sup> They wished to see the Cowper-Temple clause withdrawn, so that it might be possible to give denominational teaching in board schools. The minority believed that there should be an undenominational school available for every child whose parents wanted it. No rate aid should go to voluntary schools, because this should be accompanied by complete public control. The school boards had a prior right to supply deficiencies in school provision, and their schools had already proved their superiority over those of the volun-

<sup>1</sup> *Final Report*, part vii, § 162.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 183.

tary bodies.<sup>1</sup> Another point of disagreement concerned the meaning of 'elementary' education and the extent to which it was being financed. Some school boards were already running 'higher-grade' schools which were in effect secondary schools and, as such, were doing excellent work. But the Cross Commission majority were alarmed that such schools should be financed by public money, because in them "a portion of the cost of the education of the children of wealthier persons would be defrayed out of the rates."<sup>2</sup> The minority saw no harm in such a situation, but it should be recognised and regularised. A system of higher elementary schools, as distinct from secondary schools of the normal type, was needed, and these should be aided by public funds. This assistance should not be restricted to the existing elementary schools, which did not keep pupils beyond the age of fourteen.

The division of opinion among the members of the Cross Commission, though it reflected the divergence of views on education among the public at large, weakened the force of the recommendations that were made. Steps were, however, taken to give effect to some of its suggestions. The Code of 1890 abolished grants in respect of the three 'R's,' and this was a heavy blow to the system of 'payment by results.' It was retained only for 'class' subjects and specific subjects, such as elementary science and physical geography, taught to older children. To quote Sir George Kekewich, who was the Secretary of the Education Department at the time, the aim of the 1890 Code was "to substitute for the bald teaching of facts, and the cramming which was then necessary in order that the children might pass the annual examination and earn the grant, the development of interest and intelligence, and the acquirement of real substantial know-

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 340.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, part vii, § 129.

ledge.”<sup>1</sup> Another important outcome of the Cross Commission was the establishment of day training colleges in universities and university colleges. These date from 1890. By 1900 there were sixteen of them, and the majority of their students were reading for degrees.

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by Frank Smith, *A History of English Elementary Education* (1760-1902), pp. 331-2.



## Chapter XX

### TECHNICAL AND FURTHER EDUCATION

The Devonshire Commission and its Results. 'South Kensington' Grants. The Polytechnics. Evening Classes. University Extension and Settlements.

WHILE the Continent was in confusion during the Napoleonic wars and the years which followed them, England had been developing her textile industries, her metal manufactures, and her mines. Thus she was able to turn to best advantage the invention of machinery for spinning and weaving, and the application of steam-power. As she had been first in the field, the only way by which her Continental rivals could overcome their handicap was by developing the skill of their workers. When the Great Exhibition was held in Hyde Park in 1851, it became apparent that this country was losing its lead, and in some respects falling behind other nations. The result was a demand for the technical instruction of workers and a development of the teaching of science. This, of course, had been the original aim of the mechanics' institutes; but, as has been pointed out, the character of most of them had tended to change. One of the results of the Great Exhibition had been the foundation in 1853 of the Science and Art Department,<sup>1</sup> which certainly did much to guide and encourage the teaching of scientific subjects; but it was less successful in co-ordinating the teaching of science with technology—i.e. in showing how science could be applied to industry; and that, after all, was the crux of the matter.

A commission, under the chairmanship of the Duke of Devonshire, was appointed in 1870; during the following five years it issued a series of reports which gave a full account of the work of existing institutions giving scientific instruction; it also disseminated information on the progress in

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 158.

technology which was being made in foreign countries. In 1877, therefore, the Livery Companies of London, which for centuries had been interested in education, formed a committee to prepare a scheme for a system of technical education. The outcome of this was the foundation of the City and Guilds of London Institute. Its object was to "provide and encourage education adapted to the requirements of all classes of persons engaged, or preparing to engage, in manufacturing or other industries."<sup>1</sup> Its interest, therefore, was definitely in *applied* science. The Institute encouraged and subsidised evening classes for artisans and held examinations in technical subjects. Under its auspices also the Finsbury Technical College was opened in 1883. It was designed as "a model trade school for the instruction of artisans and other persons preparing for intermediate posts in industrial works."<sup>2</sup> Courses were held both in the evening and the day-time. They included not only basic subjects, like mathematics, science, and drawing, but also applied subjects, such as building, engineering, and design. The College became a pattern for technical colleges elsewhere. In 1884 a large Central Technical College was opened in South Kensington; it specialised in engineering. Other colleges were opened in the industrial towns of Northern England and were to a large extent financed by local manufacturing firms. In some cases (e.g. at Manchester) they were developed out of an existing mechanics' institute which had avoided the general decline and preserved something of its original purpose and function.

All this activity was followed by the appointment of another Royal Commission on Technical Instruction which reported finally in 1884. It gave an account of the facilities for technical instruction which were available in this country,

<sup>1</sup> *Second Report of the Royal Commissioners on Technical Instruction* (1884) vol. i, p. 401.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 403.

and, as the Commissioners had also carried out investigations on the Continent and in America, they were able to draw the contrast. They saw the need for technical colleges of high standard, like the Polytechnikum at Zürich; but they realised that this was only part of the problem. Technical education was not a thing apart, but was closely bound up with other forms of education. The Commission emphasised the need for good secondary schools of the 'modern' type—they probably had in mind the 'third-grade' class of school advocated by the Taunton Commissioners; and they advised that local authorities (i.e. the school boards) should be empowered to establish and maintain such schools.<sup>1</sup> Similar recommendations were made by the Cross Commission. The Technical Instruction Act of 1889 did something to give effect to these suggestions. It gave local authorities the power to levy a penny rate in order to "supply or aid in supplying technical or manual instruction."<sup>2</sup> But it is noteworthy that these authorities are no longer the school boards. The Local Government Act of 1888 had brought into being the County and County Borough Councils, and it was to these that the power to aid technical education was given. They were to appoint Technical Instruction Committees which were to be represented on the governing body of any school, college, or institution which gave the instruction. All this implied that for the first time education other than elementary could be legally aided from the rates, and also that a branch of education was put into the hands of representative bodies elected for the general purposes of local government. These are moves of great significance in the light of the subsequent development of our national educational system.

The Technical Instruction Act was permissive, but it was

<sup>1</sup>*Second Report of the Royal Commissioners on Technical Instruction*, vol. i, p. 538.

<sup>2</sup>For a definition of these terms see § 8 of the Act.

largely adopted by the new Councils. They began to provide technical instruction in day and evening classes, and this work led up to more advanced courses in technical colleges, such as the City and Guilds of London Institute. The movement received assistance from a windfall which came in 1890. In that year a sum had been set aside to compensate publicans whose licences had not been renewed. It was an annually recurring contribution from the Customs and Excise. This "whisky money," as it was called, was diverted by Parliament to local authorities for assisting technical education or for the relief of rates, at their option. Most of them were sufficiently public-spirited to devote it to the first of these purposes. But the money was administered by the South Kensington Science and Art Department, which tended to be more interested in science than in technology. Thus, although the 'whisky money' did benefit technical instruction, it tended to be spent more on the encouragement of the teaching of pure science and less for the purposes for which it had originally been intended.

The mechanics' institutes were in some sense the forerunners of the technical colleges which began to develop in the latter part of the nineteenth century. But, as has been seen, they tended in many cases to fail of their original aim because they provided not so much vocational training for working men as general educational and social facilities for members of the lower middle class. Thus they may perhaps be regarded more appropriately as the prototypes of several other kinds of institution for continuative education which became available during this same period. Chief among these are the polytechnics. Their aim was primarily educational. The best known was started by Quintin Hogg and moved to Regent Street in 1880. He aimed at "the instruction of artisans and clerks in the principles and, to some extent, the

practice of their breadwinning pursuits.”<sup>1</sup> The fees were low, and the classes—run mainly in connection with the City and Guilds Institute—included instruction in bricklaying, plumbing, electrical work, watch-making, photography, printing, and tailoring. But the Polytechnic also developed a strong social side. The whole movement received considerable impetus as the result of the City Parochial Charities Act of 1883. This Act released the accumulated charitable funds of most of the London parishes, totalling about £50,000 a year, to provide open spaces and free libraries and to promote polytechnics. A central governing body was established to supervise them, and when the London County Council came into existence as the result of the Local Government Act of 1888, it took over this work. Extra contributions came from City companies and private benefactors, and other polytechnics were established in different parts of the metropolis. The polytechnics have developed a wide range of activities—they run secondary schools and technical schools; they have domestic science and trade classes; they provide general educational courses for pupils engaged in work during the day; they have day technical classes for more advanced students; and they even prepare for university degrees. They are, in fact, as well as in name, *polytechnics*, for they teach ‘many arts’; and they have developed far beyond their original purely industrial aim.

The work of evening schools of various types was an important form of further education. They had been in existence for many years. Some of them were held in elementary schools and taught elementary subjects. Since 1855 they had earned grants, like any ordinary elementary school, in respect of their pupils who passed the examination in the three ‘R’s.’ They were, in fact, a means of giving elementary

<sup>1</sup> See E. M. Hogg, *Quintin Hogg*, chap. vi.

education to older persons whose schooling had been neglected.<sup>1</sup> But after 1870 these conditions were gradually modified. The Cross Commission, although it realised that the need still existed, felt that it was diminishing. It therefore looked to the evening classes of the future to be preliminary to institute classes, science and art classes, and university extension lectures. The Commissioners also stressed the possibilities of evening classes as an agency for moral and physical training. Other classes of this kind were held, not in schools, but in technical colleges and similar institutions (e.g. the polytechnics), and from 1861 onwards they were qualified to receive South Kensington grants. Most of the classes of the Working Men's College had always been held in the evening; so also were those of the Birmingham and Midland Institute, which dates from 1854; while in 1855 King's College, London, had opened an Evening Class Department. Birkbeck, from its foundation in 1823, has always confined itself to evening-class work. As time went on examples such as these were multiplied up and down the country. In some cases such institutions proved to be one of the factors which, at a later date, contributed to the development of a provincial university.

Another of those factors was the university extension movement. It will be remembered that Miss Clough had organised courses of lectures for women to be given in the big towns of northern England.<sup>2</sup> In 1867 a committee, of which she was the leading spirit, invited James Stuart, fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, to help them. He followed up his courses for ladies by lecturing to working men in several northern towns. A small fee was charged for these courses, written exercises were worked by those who

<sup>1</sup> There was a particularly marked increase in this type of adult education among unemployed workers in Lancashire during the cotton famine consequent upon the American Civil War of 1861-5. (See Binns, *A Century of Education*, p. 180 n.)

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, p. 186.

attended them, and an examination was held at the end. Cambridge took up the movement in 1873, and it at once went ahead. London followed suit in 1876 and Oxford in 1878. Summer meetings, connected with the extension movement and held at a university town, date from 1888. At Reading and at Exeter the university extension classes formed the nucleus of a university college; and at Reading this developed in due course into a university with a charter of its own and the power to grant degrees.<sup>1</sup> University extension lectures have dealt mainly with literary, historical, and economic subjects, and sometimes—though less often—with philosophy or science. But the history of the mechanics' institutes has in some measure been repeated in the case of these extension courses. Those who could best profit by them were those whose general education had already been carried some way. And so, at any rate in the early days, the extension lectures appealed less to working men than to people of leisure, and especially to those women whose intellectual needs had not been satisfied in the inefficient girls' schools, already described, in which they had been brought up. But while this is true, it is also true that the university extension movement did much to foster a new conception of the university's function in national life and a realisation of the university's responsibility in the field of social service.

F. D. Maurice, when he founded the Working Men's College in 1854, had already given expression to that realisation, and the growth of public-school missions, since Thring set the example, is a somewhat similar phenomenon. A lineal successor of Maurice was Arnold Toynbee (1852-83). As an Oxford don he interested himself in social and economic questions and won many friends among the

<sup>1</sup> The development at Reading from the holding of university extension lectures to the granting of a university charter is traced in W. M. Childs, *Making a University*.

working classes in the East End of London. His weak constitution could not stand the strain of the work which he put upon himself, and he died young. In memory of him Toynbee Hall, the first university settlement, was opened in Whitechapel in 1884. Its aim was "to link the universities with East London and to direct the human sympathies, the energies, and the public spirit of Oxford and Cambridge to the actual conditions of town life." Under the wardenship of Canon Barnett, Toynbee Hall rapidly became a focus of varied social and educational activities. Its example has been extensively followed. Some of the settlements, such as Oxford House in Bethnal Green, Cambridge House in Lambeth, and the Manchester University Settlement at Ancoats, are—like Toynbee Hall—closely linked with universities. But there has also been a growth of settlements having a similar aim, but not directly of university origin. They have been founded by such bodies as the Wesleyans, the Jewish community, the Boy Scouts, and many other agencies. But their common purpose is that which both Toynbee and Maurice had at heart. It is, that those who have had greater opportunities of intellectual and cultural development may give practical expression to their responsibilities towards their less-privileged brethren, that mutual understanding and sympathy may be promoted, and that this may tend to the lessening of inequalities between class and class.



## *Chapter XXI*

### THE TRAINING OF TEACHERS

The Pupil-teacher System. Training Colleges. Training for Secondary-school Teaching. The Teachers' Register. Professional Associations.

THE provision of schools and the education of children presuppose a supply of teachers to carry on the work. In the case of the endowed schools and public schools it was not usually considered that a course of special professional training should be provided for those who were to teach in them. The headmaster almost always, and the members of his staff usually, held university degrees; and often he, and sometimes they, were in holy orders. So long as teaching in this kind of school meant gerund-grinding, and great reliance was placed on the character-training which was supposed to be imparted by the formularies of the Church of England, no other kind of preparation was felt to be necessary. But that was not quite the case with the elementary schools. Even in the first part of the nineteenth century, as we have seen, the two Societies, as well as individuals such as David Stow and Kay-Shuttleworth, had been training teachers, as teachers, for elementary schools.

In order to draw together the threads of this subject, it will be necessary to look back for a moment to the period before 1870, though it was the introduction of a national system of elementary education in that year that rendered more urgent than ever the problem of providing a sufficient number of qualified teachers to work it. The earliest training colleges had developed out of the monitorial system. Because Kay-Shuttleworth realised its shortcomings, he introduced the pupil-teacher system to take its place. Pupil-teachers were children chosen at the age of thirteen, from among the most promising pupils in an elementary school. They were formally apprenticed to the headmaster for a term

of five years, and were examined on a prescribed graded syllabus at the end of each year. If they acquitted themselves creditably, the Government paid the headmaster a grant of £5 for one pupil-teacher, £9 for two, and £3 for each additional one. At the end of the apprenticeship—i.e. at the age of eighteen—the pupil-teachers could sit for a competitive examination. The successful candidates were awarded Queen's Scholarships, which entitled them to a three-year course at a training college. At the end of it they qualified as certificated teachers. This scheme had been introduced by Kay-Shuttleworth in 1846. In the following year there were 200 pupil-teachers; by 1861 their number had risen to 13,871 and the Newcastle Commission, although it criticised the arduousness and mechanical nature of their training, said that there could be no doubt that the pupil-teacher system was "upon the whole excellent."<sup>1</sup> Matthew Arnold in his *Report* on the state of education in France<sup>2</sup> went so far as to say that pupil-teachers were "the sinews of English primary instruction."

The pupil-teacher system suffered a setback owing to the introduction of the Revised Code in 1862. The syllabus of their work was narrowed; intending teachers were encouraged to study just those subjects which they would afterwards have to teach. This syllabus was also applied to the training colleges, so that the student was still kept in the narrow range of subjects comprised in the elementary-school curriculum. The agreement of apprenticeship between pupil-teacher and headmaster was replaced by one between him and the school managers. By 1866 the number of pupil-teachers had fallen by more than a third and the standard of the Queen's Scholarships had to be lowered. In order to ward off a threatened shortage of teachers the Government was forced to increase its grants. The Act of

<sup>1</sup> *Report* of Newcastle Commission, p. 106.

<sup>2</sup> P. 74.

1870 did something to repair the ravages of the Revised Code and to render elementary-school teaching more attractive. But misgivings had already begun to arise as to the effectiveness of the whole system. The question was asked whether it was really wise to entrust the academic education of pupil-teachers to a headmaster, for so much depended on the effectiveness and conscientiousness of the individual who assumed this responsibility. The answer of the school boards was to develop pupil-teacher centres. Intending teachers were collected at these centres for instruction in classes, at first in the evenings and on Saturdays. In 1884 a further advance was made. Pupil-teachers were not required to teach for more than half-time in their schools; the other half could be given to day-time instruction in these centres which thus became in practice a specialised type of school. Some of them after the Act of 1902 were developed into county secondary schools.

In spite of these changes, it is obvious that by the middle of the eighties the pupil-teacher system was beginning to break up.<sup>1</sup> This is illustrated in the reports of the Cross Commission. The majority, although realising the weakness of the system, felt that it should be maintained and improved because there was "no other available, or as we prefer to say, equally trustworthy source from which an adequate supply of teachers is likely to be forthcoming."<sup>2</sup> The minority expressed the opinion that "the overwhelming mass of the evidence is that these young people are unsatisfactory as teachers and ill-taught and ill-trained as scholars. . . . The training colleges are unable to do all that they should for their students on account of the unprepared and crude state in which they receive them."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A most interesting first-hand account of pupil-teaching at this period is given in Spencer, *An Inspector's Testament*, chap. iv.

<sup>2</sup> *Final Report*, p. 88.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 277.

The problem of the pupil-teachers was closely bound up with the problem of the training colleges. The whole system was a closed one. The pupil-teacher started as a member of an elementary school; he then became a pupil-teacher, probably in the same school; thence, if successful in the Queen's Scholarship examination, he went on to an elementary training college; and finally he returned to an elementary school as a teacher and spent the rest of his professional life in the elementary service. That system did not begin to give way until the nineties, and its doom was not sealed until the Act of 1902 had made possible the rise of a number of State-aided secondary schools. It then became more and more common to send boys and girls to these secondary schools before apprenticeship, rather than to train them in specialised pupil-teacher centres. In 1907 the pupil in a secondary school who intended to teach was allowed to remain there up to the age of seventeen or eighteen as a 'bursar' and then proceed direct to a training college, or he could become a 'student teacher,' spending half his time in actual practice in an elementary school and during the other half continuing his studies in his secondary school.

In the early days there had been some difference of opinion as to the length of the training-college course and the nature of its curriculum. At first the course in some colleges lasted only a few months; in others its length was one, two, or even three years. In some the staple of the curriculum was professional training; elsewhere general education was stressed. But too often the syllabus was shallow and ambitious; it tended to encourage memory work and superficiality and rule-of-thumb methods in teaching practice. For all that, the training colleges turned out a succession of teachers who, according to their lights, faced and overcame the severe handicaps under which they

worked, and who deserved well of the community. Their salaries were low and there was little hope of public recognition or reward for their services. They tackled huge classes in ill-equipped premises, and they were perpetually exposed to the demoralising influences of 'payment by results.' But they laid the foundations of our national system of elementary education. Although, therefore, not all of them were products of the training colleges, it is obvious that these institutions have played a most important part in the educational history of this country—a part that is not always fully recognised. At the time of the Cross Commission forty-three of these colleges were in existence. They were all residential and run by voluntary effort; most of them belonged to the Church of England, so that the facilities available for nonconformists or Roman Catholics were limited. The accommodation also was by no means sufficient for all the pupil-teachers who had passed the Queen's Scholarship examination and were therefore theoretically qualified for admission. This situation explains the Cross Commission minority's recommendation that day students should be admitted without denominational restrictions to training colleges which had hitherto been entirely residential; it also wished "to utilise the colleges and other places of higher instruction which are willing to aid in the training of teachers, and to encourage the formation of educational faculties in such colleges either in conjunction with or apart from the local school board."<sup>1</sup> As we have seen,<sup>2</sup> this recommendation was put into effect in the year 1890, which for that reason is a date of great importance in the history of the training of teachers in this country. The Education Department authorised universities or university colleges to set up training departments in which students could read for degrees; selected students in training colleges

<sup>1</sup> *Final Report*, p. 290.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, p. 206.

could also take degree courses. 'University' departments were at once opened at King's College, London, and Owens College, Manchester, and in several other colleges. Cambridge had a 'university day training college' in 1891 and Oxford in 1892. By 1901 there were seventeen departments of this kind. As Adamson points out,<sup>1</sup> "they were not all non-residential, and none of them was a 'college' in the customary sense of the word." Their true *differentia* was that they formed an integral part of a university or university college.

In the field of elementary education the professional training of teachers has been bound up at every stage with the development of a national system of schools. But this has been far less the case with secondary education. As has already been pointed out, the possession of a degree—especially if it were reinforced by holy orders—was regarded as an entirely adequate qualification for teaching in an endowed or public school. Secondary-school masters doubtless tended to judge professional training by the type of training which was given in some of the elementary training colleges; and it is true that the teaching methods instilled into ex-monitors or pupil-teachers had often been extremely mechanical. If professional training in a special college for schoolmasters seemed to produce men of narrow views and superficial knowledge and unattractive personality, the inference which the secondary branch of the profession drew was that such training should be avoided. Thus during most of the nineteenth century secondary schools remained largely uninterested in the question of professional training. The first impulse towards such training for secondary-school teachers came from women. Headmistresses believed in it and worked for it long before any headmaster did. The reason may be that women on the

<sup>1</sup> Adamson, *English Education*, 1789-1902, p. 380.

whole are more concerned about the details of technique and organisation than men are, and that the average headmaster may be more ready to think that so long as a man's discipline is sound, he can be left to work out his own salvation as a teacher.

Facilities for the professional training and qualification of secondary-school teachers were first afforded by the College of Preceptors, which was founded as early as 1846 and incorporated in 1849. One of its aims, as defined in its charter, was "promoting sound learning and advancing the interests of Education, more especially among the middle classes, by affording facilities to the teacher for the acquiring of a sound knowledge of his profession, and by providing for the periodical Session of a competent Board of Examiners to ascertain and give certificates of the acquirements and fitness for their office of persons engaged or desiring to be engaged in the Education of Youth." Any surplus funds which the College might possess were to be devoted *inter alia* "in or towards the founding or endowing of normal or training schools, or in instituting lectureships on any subject connected with the Theory or Practice of Education."<sup>1</sup> Diplomas for teachers, covering professional as well as academic competence, were instituted, and courses of lectures in educational theory and practice were arranged. In 1872 the first professorship in education in England was established by the College. Its occupant was Joseph Payne, who had already done much to interest English people in the educational ideas and experiments of Continental reformers. He was also an ardent advocate of the higher education of girls and women, and among those who attended his courses was Mrs. Sophie Bryant, who succeeded Miss Buss as headmistress of the North London Collegiate School. The professorship came to an end with Payne's

<sup>1</sup> College of Preceptors, *Charter*, § 26.

death in 1876. An attempt to establish a Day Training College in connection with the College of Preceptors was made in 1895, but this also was discontinued in 1898. The College still continues to award professional diplomas and it organises courses of lectures on educational subjects.

The College of Preceptors diplomas were of value particularly to teachers in private schools, many of whom had not had the opportunity to obtain the more orthodox qualification of a university degree. The first university chairs of education were established in 1876 at Edinburgh and St. Andrew's out of funds left by Dr. Andrew Bell for educational purposes. A similar movement was in progress at Cambridge, and it led to the appointment in 1879 of a Teachers' Training Syndicate. Courses of lectures were arranged and an examination in the theory, history, and practice of education was introduced—but lecturing and examination do not constitute training in teaching. The success of these lectures and examinations was due to a considerable extent to the provision in 1885 of a Cambridge Training College for Women, largely with the support of Miss Buss. Miss Beale had also introduced a training department into the Ladies' College at Cheltenham; and the Girls' Public Day School Trust from the first aimed at providing facilities for student teachers to be trained for their profession under the direction of the headmistress. Maria Grey, who was largely responsible for the formation of the Trust, was also concerned with the founding in 1878 of a training college for women teachers. It is now situated in Brondesbury, a suburb of London. Annexed to it is a girls' secondary school, with junior and kindergarten departments, and of this full use for practice and observation is made by the students.

Thus 'professional training' remained largely a women's movement so far as secondary teaching was concerned.



When, in 1894, Henry Sidgwick was giving evidence before a Royal Commission, he said of the Cambridge Training Syndicate that its scheme had "remained almost inoperative up to the present time so far as the schoolmasters for whose benefit it was primarily instituted are concerned; though it has been used to an important extent by women preparing for secondary teaching." But the opening of university day training departments from 1890 onwards, though they were designed primarily for the professional training of elementary-school teachers, reacted in favour of training for secondary-school teachers also; and this affected men no less than women. This was particularly noticeable after the opening of many new secondary schools, consequent upon the Education Act of 1902. These municipal or county schools were often evolved from an older pupil-teacher centre or higher-grade school. When this happened, the original staff was usually absorbed into the new secondary school, and thus graduates who had been trained as elementary-school teachers began to appear on secondary-school staffs. The new schools also created a demand for well-qualified graduate teachers, which could be supplied only by drawing on the university day training colleges. All this tended to break down the hard-and-fast line of demarcation which had separated the elementary and secondary branches of the profession, and it helped to counter the old idea that, even if training were necessary for the one class, it was not necessary for the other.

The question of professional training is bound up with that of the registration of teachers. The law, medicine, dentistry, pharmaceutical chemistry, accountancy, and many other professions have their registers; and unless one's name appears there, one is legally debarred from practising. But even to this day that condition does not exist as regards teaching. This has been due not merely to

public indifference and consequent lack of Government support, but also to the great variety of types of teacher and the want of homogeneity within the teaching profession itself. So long, for example, as teachers in public, endowed, elementary, and private schools regarded themselves as separate classes, hardly at all overlapping, there could be no register to contain them all alike. There were, however, those who realised the importance of the problem. The College of Preceptors from the beginning advocated registration, and, owing to the action of its Council, a 'Scholastic Registration Association' was formed in 1866. The Schools Inquiry Commission two years later recommended the institution of certificates of competence to teach, granted after the passing of an examination.<sup>1</sup> Perhaps it is understandable that no effect was given to these recommendations. But the matter did not rest there, and other attempts were made to secure a register. In the *Report* of the Bryce Commission of 1894—which will be discussed more fully in a later chapter—the following passage occurs: "The formation of such a register has long been desired by a large number of the members of the teaching profession, and the evidence, which we have received during the course of our enquiry, shows that the need for some official test and standard of professional efficiency has now become a matter of general agreement."<sup>2</sup> In 1898 a Teachers' Registration Bill was introduced into Parliament. It was withdrawn; but by the Board of Education Act of 1899 an advisory or consultative committee was formed, and to it was given the duty of drawing up a register of teachers. This was to be divided into two 'columns'—A and B. Into column A went the certificated teachers in elementary schools; while in column B were placed those teachers in secondary schools who could fulfil certain requirements as

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 153.

<sup>2</sup> *Report*, p. 318. See §§ 152-8.

to general attainments and show either training or adequate experience in recognised schools. There were to be supplementary registers for teachers of special subjects. The scheme broke down for various reasons. Column A was never printed, and therefore those on it were virtually excluded from recognition; elementary-school teachers not unnaturally resented the distinction between A and B; and it was found in practice that the regulations governing admission to column B did not encourage professional training for secondary schoolmasters in the way that had been hoped. A new Teachers' Registration Council was established by an Act of 1907.<sup>1</sup> Those admitted to its register appear in one alphabetical list, and it can include teachers in all types of schools and institutions, including universities. In 1930 the teachers whose names appeared on this register were constituted the Royal Society of Teachers and entitled to append the letters M.R.S.T. to their names. Registration is voluntary, and by no means all of those who are entitled to register have done so. Thus the register, though it deserved to succeed, has achieved only a modified success. Neither the Board or Ministry of Education, nor the local authorities, have made any effective use of it—e.g. by requiring that teachers holding at least certain positions should be registered. Perhaps as the result of more recent legislation some at any rate of the effects of registration may be achieved in other ways.

An indication of the growth of what one may call professional consciousness is shown by the founding of teachers' associations, which is a feature of the second half of the nineteenth century. The activities of the Schools Inquiry Commission gave rise to some concern among the heads of the endowed schools and, as has been seen, one result of this was the establishment of the Headmasters'

<sup>1</sup> Education (Administrative Provisions) Act, 1907, § 16.

Conference in 1869. It has met regularly ever since. It tends to be a conservative body—what Professor Archer calls an ‘educational House of Lords’—and to be distrustful of State interference. Its membership is in the main limited to headmasters of schools of the ‘independent’ type, which send a regular and adequate proportion of boys to Oxford and Cambridge. However, the Conference has helped the heads of these schools to get together, and it has also set up the Oxford and Cambridge Joint Board examination for the pupils of such schools. The headmistresses formed their own association in 1874, but it has been less exclusive. Its founder and first president was Miss Buss, and she was succeeded in 1894 by Miss Beale. Thring showed his goodwill towards this association by inviting its members to hold one of their meetings at Uppingham. Meanwhile the elementary teachers had not been idle. In 1870 the National Union of Elementary Teachers was formed and the word ‘Elementary’ was dropped from its title in 1889. Other sectional societies have also come into existence—the Independent Schools Association (1883), the Headmasters’ Association (1890), which admitted those secondary-school heads who were not eligible for the Conference, the Associations for secondary-school assistant mistresses (1884), and assistant masters (1891). Besides these there were endless professional or semi-professional societies concerned with purely educational matters, or with particular subjects of the curriculum and methods of teaching them. The very variety of these societies and associations is an indication of the sectionalism which has hampered the growth of the idea of a unified profession, and its expression in a teachers’ register; but it has stimulated vigour and interest. The evolution of a more closely knit national system of education and the gradual obliteration of frontiers inside it, which have marked recent years, are

shown in the formation of 'Joint-Four' or 'Joint-Six' committees, representative of several sectional societies, and in suggestions which have been made in some quarters for the absorption of all such societies in one comprehensive association.

## Chapter XXII

### UNIVERSITY AND SECONDARY EDUCATION

Progress at Oxford, Cambridge, and London. Rise of the 'Modern' Universities.  
New Types of Secondary School.

As an outcome of the Oxford and Cambridge University Acts of 1854 and 1856<sup>1</sup> there was considerable progress at both universities. Religious tests for degrees (except in divinity) were not abolished till 1871, but in the same year the snobbish distinction between noblemen, gentlemen commoners, and commoners was swept away. New final honours schools or triposes were instituted. At Oxford Natural Science dates from 1853, Law and History from the same year—but they were separated in 1873—and Theology from 1870. Oriental languages, English language and literature, and mediæval and modern languages also became subjects for honours degrees. The development of science at Oxford and Cambridge dates mainly from the sixties and seventies of last century, as is evidenced by the foundation of the university laboratories and the establishment of new science professorships. The organisation of the two universities was affected by the activities of a Royal Commission on Oxford and Cambridge, with the Duke of Cleveland as chairman, which was appointed in 1872 and reported in 1874. An Oxford and Cambridge Act was passed in 1877 which gave the Commissioners power to frame statutes for the colleges, for the Acts of 1854 and 1856 had dealt only with *university* statutes. Other results were not inconsiderable. Life-fellowships were abolished and prize fellowships for research were instituted; fellowships involved teaching duties and the salaries attached to them were standardised. Celibacy was no longer required of college Fellows, and the result was a vast growth of suburban

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, pp. 142-144.

north Oxford. New professorships were founded and the endowments of existing chairs were increased by the annexation to them of college fellowships. This strengthened the association between the colleges and the professoriate. These reforms, following on the abolition of religious tests, had the effect of transforming Oxford and Cambridge from a group of largely clerical institutions into modern universities. A system of inter-collegiate lectures was introduced, and this was gradually extended until they became available to all undergraduates who were reading for honours. Non-collegiate students were also admitted at Oxford in 1868 and at Cambridge in the following year—a step which had been suggested by the Commissioners of 1852. Numbers increased and college buildings were enlarged. Two new colleges, both associated with the Church of England, also were opened—Keble at Oxford in 1870, and Selwyn at Cambridge in 1882. Other religious denominations moved their theological colleges to the universities, and although they did not become officially part of them, their students were able to benefit from the teaching and other amenities which the university afforded. This too is the period of the opening of the women's colleges at both Oxford and Cambridge, to which reference has already been made. It marks also the growth of the university extension movement and the increasing university influence on secondary schools through the local, or 'middle class,' examinations, which had been in existence since 1858.

The second half of the nineteenth century saw not only a revival in the two ancient Universities, but also a multiplication of other institutions of university rank in various parts of the country. There are various reasons for this. In spite of reforms, there was still a tendency for many of the undergraduates at Oxford and Cambridge to be drawn from the 'upper classes,' or at any rate to be in easy financial

circumstances. Life therefore tended to be expensive, though attempts had been made to reduce extravagance and increase scholarships. The poor student was certainly not excluded, but he was in the minority, and the success of Durham had shown the demand for university facilities of the Oxford and Cambridge type, but at a cheaper rate. Again, most of those who went to the older Universities were destined for the Church or teaching in public or endowed schools or the law or political or administrative careers. The bulk of the instruction given therefore tended to have the needs of such candidates in view. This is not to say that science and mathematics were neglected, as has already been indicated. But there was an increasing demand for teaching of an advanced university type in subjects which could be more definitely applied in the great manufacturing industries and which would be directly accessible to students living in the areas where they were carried on. Again, with the development of secondary education, not only in grammar schools, but in 'higher-grade' and similar schools, the demand for better-qualified teachers increased; and as women, as well as men, can be teachers, the need for giving university facilities to women was emphasised.

These needs had for some time to a great extent been met by the University of London—or rather by institutions, like University College and King's College, which submitted their students for London degrees. There was a good deal of criticism of a university which was an examining, but not a teaching, body, and which did not concern itself in the least with the origin or training of its students. The staffs of the colleges which submitted students for London degrees also complained that they had no hand in drawing up syllabuses or setting examination papers. As usual, this led eventually to the appointment of a Royal



Commission (1888-9), with Lord Selborne as chairman, which endorsed the proposal that the University should become a teaching as well as an examining institution, but left the details undecided. A second Commission, known as the 'Gresham,' reporting in 1894, drew up a scheme which appeared in a modified form as the result of a University of London Act of 1898. The reconstituted University continued to examine 'external' students and did not concern itself with their training. They could work privately or in some institution along the lines of a syllabus prescribed by the University, and merely sit for the examinations, which were normally held in London. But the new constitution provided also for 'internal' students who attended courses in colleges which became constituent schools of the teaching University. They included twenty-four institutions of many different types, and one or two of them were not actually in London. In addition to University College and King's College, there were the great London teaching hospitals, a number of theological colleges belonging to various denominations, the London School of Economics (founded in 1895), and women's colleges like Bedford, and the Royal Holloway College at Egham which had been at work since 1886. The reconstituted University also included the Royal College of Science, the Central Technical College of the City and Guilds Institute, and the South-Eastern Agricultural College at Wye, in Kent. The organisation and administration of such an amorphous body were not easy.

With the exception of Durham, the first of the great provincial universities originated in Manchester. In 1851 a college had been opened as the result of a bequest by a local merchant, John Owens. Its aim was laid down as the provision of instruction "in such branches of learning and science as are now, and may be hereafter, usually taught in

the English universities.”<sup>1</sup> It had an uncertain start and much of its work was done in evening classes. But by 1864 there were 127 day and 312 evening students, and the corner was turned. Subscriptions flowed in and an Act of Parliament in 1871 gave Owens College a new constitution and admitted women as students. It ran courses for London degrees, and there were, of course, no religious tests. Meanwhile Yorkshire was not being left behind. In 1874 a college of science and technology, called the Yorkshire College, was founded at Leeds. Liverpool University College dates from 1881, and was united in 1884 to Owens College, Manchester, in a federal university—Victoria—which granted its own degrees and was independent of London. Leeds joined the federation in 1887. But federal universities tend to be unwieldy and their organisation is difficult. Victoria broke up in 1903, and since that date the three cities have had their separate universities, each with a full range of faculties, and each giving its own degrees. Birmingham University evolved from a college founded by Josiah Mason in 1880. Its original aims were frankly utilitarian, and they illustrate rather crudely the ideas in the minds of some of those who were concerned in the founding of the colleges out of which the universities in the great industrial cities developed. Mason stipulated that his college should foster scientific education “to the exclusion of mere literary education and instruction, and of all teaching of theology and of subjects purely theological.”<sup>2</sup> Subsequent developments led to a modification of Mason’s scheme, and Birmingham now gives degrees in arts, and has instituted a chair in theology. The university’s charter dates from 1900. Other universities have developed from University College, Bristol, Firth College, Sheffield, and University College,

<sup>1</sup> Fiddes, *Owens College and Manchester University*, p. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Foundation deed, dated December 12th, 1870.

Reading. Originally they prepared their students for London degrees, but they now have charters and are independent. Armstrong College (now King's College), Newcastle, which dates from 1871, is an integral part of the University of Durham. The University Colleges at Nottingham, Southampton, Exeter, Hull, and Leicester have not yet reached university status and still submit their students for 'external' London degrees. In Wales the University College at Aberystwyth dates from 1872. Similar colleges were founded during the eighties at Cardiff and Bangor; and all three prepared for London degrees. But a charter of 1893 established a teaching University of Wales, with three constituent colleges, to which as a fourth the Swansea Technical College was admitted in 1920.

It should be noted that none of the modern universities was founded as such—they have gradually evolved out of colleges of various types. They have not been able to obtain their charters as independent universities until they could satisfy the Privy Council that their financial position was such as to enable them to carry on university work in a proper manner. They have owed their origin and growth largely to private benevolence and have been supported by business firms and municipalities. Treasury grants have also supplemented local resources. The first amount voted for this purpose was a sum of £15,000 devoted in 1889 to the needs of the university colleges. By 1902 the grant had risen to £24,000. The universities which have grown out of these provincial colleges are for the most part situated in industrial areas, and for that reason have tended to develop a scientific or technological bias. They have evolved new faculties and departments—economics and commerce, engineering and metallurgy, textile and leather working, dyeing and brewing, agriculture and horticulture; but they realise now—even if they have not always done so in the

past—that higher technological work can be built only on a basis of general education, and they all provide a full range of arts and pure science subjects. Their relative cheapness and their greater accessibility have opened university education, as never before since the Middle Ages, to the ‘lower classes.’ But there has been in the past a danger of their functioning simply as places of instruction rather than as societies. So long as students live at home or in lodgings and merely travel backwards and forwards to attend university classes, it is difficult to develop that community life which is perhaps the most educative thing that the university has to offer. This weakness of the provincial university system has been increasingly countered by the provision of halls of residence. At the University of Reading, which has never been a ‘provincial’ university in the ordinary sense, serving chiefly its own neighbourhood, the principle of residence in college for all students, as at Oxford and Cambridge, has been fully in operation from the first.

The result of the Endowed Schools Act of 1869 had been a gradual redistribution of the endowments of secondary schools. It was said that the Commissioners whom it appointed could turn a boys’ school in Cornwall into a girls’ school in Northumberland. But the Commissioners could not solve the whole of the problem. There was, in fact, no plan about the scheme, no framework of national or local organisation, and no aid from parliamentary grants or rates. As a whole, therefore, there was still a deficiency of secondary education, and private endeavour had not been able to supply the lack. To meet this situation some of the larger and more progressive school boards stepped into the breach. The Education Department had been giving grants not only for ‘obligatory’ and ‘class’ subjects, but also for what were called ‘specific’ subjects. These could be earned by children in the upper standards of elementary schools;

and they included branches of mathematics and science, agriculture, languages, and commercial and domestic arts. Indirectly, therefore, education of a secondary type was being aided. Not only this, but Government assistance could be obtained from grants distributed on the result of examinations conducted by the Science and Art Department, independently of the Education Department; and this provided a further revenue for more advanced instruction in connection with elementary schools. In 1872 the Leeds School Board established what it called a higher-grade board school. Its example was followed by other large towns, including London. The movement progressed steadily in the eighties, and by 1894 there were in the country sixty-three of these higher-grade schools. Other progressive elementary schools developed 'higher tops,' consisting of pupils who had passed through Standard VII and were staying on to take more advanced work.

Education of this type was also encouraged by the offer by the Science and Art Department of grants for establishing what were called 'organised science schools'—i.e. grouped science classes, which might be held in the day-time or in the evening and which could meet in an elementary, higher-grade, or even an endowed school. The position of the higher-grade school was doubtless an irregular one, because the Education Act of 1870 gave the school boards control over elementary education only; but these schools were officially condoned, or even encouraged. The school boards had no power to organise or control secondary-school provision in their areas, and yet some of them were devoting rate aid to institutions which were giving an education quite as extended as that given in many of the smaller endowed schools, which received neither Government grant nor local rate aid; and this led to competition and controversy. There was no clear definition of the limits and

nature of elementary and secondary education.<sup>1</sup> Yet few people really wished to raise the issues involved. The big school boards realised that they were establishing a claim to control popular secondary education and did not wish to have this disputed; the opponents of the school boards did not want to provoke a situation which might result in the formal grant of local control and State aid to secondary schools. Thus, although Matthew Arnold's slogan had been "organise your secondary education," it was generally felt safer to let things slide. The Cross Commission of 1888, although appointed to review elementary education, could not, as things were, avoid some reference to secondary education. It suggested that if the curriculum of higher elementary schools were restricted within due limits, avoiding all attempts to invade the ground properly belonging to secondary schools, such schools might prove a useful addition to the existing school machinery for primary education. This was vague enough; but the minority report's recommendations were more definite. The provision of higher elementary schools was specifically advocated; and pupils would be drafted to them at the age of eleven or twelve. "The higher elementary school would satisfy the wants of an entirely different class from those who desire secondary education. Secondary education is for those who will be under continuous instruction till sixteen or eighteen, whether they go on afterwards to higher university instruction or not; whereas this higher elementary education is intended to teach more thoroughly those who must begin

<sup>1</sup> The Cross Commission had drawn attention to this point. Cf. "As the meaning and limits of the term 'elementary' have not been defined in the Education Acts, nor by any judicial or authoritative interpretation, but depend only upon the annual codes of the Department, on whose power of framing such codes no limit has hitherto been imposed, it would appear to be of absolute necessity that some definition of the instruction to be paid for out of the rates and taxes should be put forth by the legislature. Until this is done, the limits of primary and secondary education cannot be defined." (*Final Report*, part vii, §115.)

to earn their living, or at any rate begin to learn their trade, at fourteen or fifteen years."<sup>1</sup> This implied that these higher primary schools—to use a French term—would be assimilated to the elementary-school system of Government aid and Government control, rather than to the secondary-school system, which so far was virtually free from both.

It should be noted that in practice the term 'higher grade' was never very clearly defined.<sup>2</sup> The best of the schools of this type were fully organised, and some took pupils up to the age of sixteen; but others were ordinary elementary schools with 'tops,' and some of the voluntary schools had 'tops' of this kind. Moreover, the higher-grade schools, assisted as they were by public funds, often competed severely with the endowed grammar schools, many of which—in spite of the 1869 Act—were still poverty-stricken and inefficient; and this helped to depress the grammar-school type of education to the advantage of schools which tended to emphasise—or even over-emphasise—instruction of a non-literary type. The whole situation was, in fact, becoming extremely complicated. Elementary education was still in the hands of the school boards which received Government grants and rate aid, and of the voluntary bodies which also received these grants but no rate aid. Some of the school boards were running higher-grade schools which were really secondary schools, although aided by the rates, supplemented as a rule by grants from the Science and Art Department. Technical education had been put into the hands of the newly formed county and county borough councils, and they also could levy a rate for this purpose. Secondary schools were still nominally free from control and were dependent on endowments or fees, or both; their authorities were boards of governors, com-

<sup>1</sup> Cross Commission, *Final Report*, p. 319.

<sup>2</sup> See Hadow *Report on The Education of the Adolescent*, pp. 23-4.

panies like the G.P.D.S.T., or private proprietors. But in some cases these schools managed also to earn grants from the Science and Art Department, based on the results of examinations taken by their pupils; or they might be able to qualify for assistance from the technical-education funds administered by the county and county borough councils. In addition to this there was no organic relation between either the school boards or the councils and the new university colleges which were springing up in the big provincial cities. The *Report* of the Bryce Commission, which will be discussed in the next chapter, spoke of the confusion arising from this lack of organisation and of the "results of dispersed and unconnected forces, needless competition between the different agencies, and a frequent overlapping of effort, with much consequent waste of money, of time, and of labour."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Report* of Bryce Commission, vol. i, p. 18.



## Chapter XXIII

### A NATIONAL SYSTEM OF EDUCATION

The Bryce Commission and the 1902 Act.

It was obvious that the 'administrative muddle,' as Adamson calls it, could not continue indefinitely. In order to find some solution a Royal Commission on Secondary Education, with James Bryce<sup>1</sup> as chairman, was appointed in 1894 and reported in 1895. Its terms of reference were "to consider what are the best methods of establishing a well-organised system of Secondary Education in England, taking into account existing deficiencies, and having regard to such local sources of revenue from endowment or otherwise as are available or may be made available for this purpose, and to make recommendations accordingly."<sup>2</sup> The Commissioners conceived their task to be "nothing less than to complete the educational system of England, now confessedly defective in that part which lies between the elementary schools on the one hand and the Universities on the other, and to frame an organisation which shall be at once firm and flexible."<sup>3</sup> They examined a large number of witnesses and sent out a questionnaire to many "persons and bodies specially competent to supply information." They also examined the secondary-school systems of several European countries, the United States, and the self-governing colonies (as they then were) of Canada and the Australian States.

The recommendations of the Commission may be summarised as follows: There should be a unified Central Authority, including the existing Education Department, the Science and Art Department, and the Charity Commission so far as its activities were concerned with educa-

<sup>1</sup> He had acted as an assistant commissioner for the Schools Inquiry Commission, and had emphasised the pressing need for educational co-ordination.

<sup>2</sup> *Report*, p. xxvi.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 2.

tional endowments. This authority "ought to consist of a Department of the Executive Government, presided over by a Minister responsible to Parliament, who would obviously be the same Minister as the one to whom the charge of elementary education is entrusted."<sup>1</sup> Its functions would be not "to control, but rather to supervise the Secondary Education of the country, not to override or supersede local action, but to endeavour to bring about among the various agencies which provide that education a harmony and a co-operation which are now wanting."<sup>2</sup> An advisory council of not more than twelve "persons specially conversant with education and holding an independent position"<sup>3</sup> should also be set up. In 1899 a Board of Education Act was passed which gave effect to these recommendations and which brought into existence a Consultative Committee, though the powers given to it were less than those recommended by the Bryce Commissioners.

The *Report* advocated that in every county and county borough there should be set up a local authority for *all* types of secondary education. The higher-grade schools and organised science schools were to be treated as if they were secondary. The majority of the members of each local authority would be appointed by the county council and others nominated by the Central Office or co-opted; but in the county boroughs the councils and the school boards were to appoint an equal number of representatives, together with co-opted members. Persons possessing educational experience as teachers were to be included. The local authorities would be required by the Central Office to take steps to make due provision for secondary education in any area where this was considered to be insufficient. They should have power to aid from the rates secondary schools, whether under their direct management or not; this would

<sup>1</sup> *Report*, p. 257.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 258.

include existing endowed schools, as well as new schools to be established by the councils. The local authorities might also, with the sanction of the Central Office, acquire by agreement proprietary or private schools; while such schools as remained independent should be subject to recognition by the local authority and inspection by the Central Office. Fees, fixed in relation to the real cost of schooling, should be retained; but rate-aid, not exceeding 2*d.* in the £, should be extended for the benefit of secondary education. Whether it would be necessary to supplement this by Government grants must be left for experience to decide. But "ample provision should be made by every local authority for enabling selected children of the poorer parents to climb the educational ladder."<sup>1</sup> To this end a sufficient supply of scholarships should be made available. They should cover the cost of instruction, and in some cases boarding fees as well; and they should be fairly apportioned as between boys and girls.

The Commissioners thought that the Central Office should regulate, but not conduct, the examination of secondary schools. This would leave intact the existing university 'locals' and similar examinations; but the Central Office, aided by its advisory council, should 'correlate' the examination certificates and 'make them interchangeable.' "Such certificates might also well be accepted by the various professional examining bodies, as covering the preliminary and general portions of their examinations."<sup>2</sup> In the appointment of inspectors for secondary schools "great weight ought to be given to previous experience in teaching; and duly qualified women should be chosen where there is likely to be sufficient work for them."<sup>3</sup> The appointment, conditions of service, and payment of teachers should also be safeguarded, and the advisory committee of

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 300.<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 305.<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

the Central Authority "should be charged with the duty of instituting and keeping a register of teachers."<sup>1</sup> The *Report* also advocated professional training for teachers in secondary schools. "To all reforms which can raise the status and tone of the teaching profession, can draw abler men and women into it by the prospects of a better career, can more adequately fit them for their work by the provision of general and special preparation, we attach the utmost importance."<sup>2</sup> Those words might have been quoted from the report of the McNair Committee issued nearly fifty years later.

In conclusion, it should be noted that the Bryce Commissioners seemed apprehensive lest the old grammar-school type of secondary education might be too far replaced by technical and scientific education. They were anxious to guard against this. "The importance of preserving all grammar schools which are, or can be, made efficient depends largely on the general ground that such schools represent especially the tradition of literary education. There is little danger at the present day that we shall fail to recognise the necessity for improving and extending scientific and technical instruction. It is less certain that we may not run some risk of a lop-sided development in education, in which the teaching of science, theoretical or applied, may so predominate as to entail comparative neglect of studies which are of less obvious and immediate utility, though not of less moment for the formation of mind and character. In efficient grammar schools, as existing examples prove, it is possible to harmonise modern requirements with the best elements of that older system which has produced good results in the past, and which in our own day still represents so much that is fundamental and indispensable in a properly liberal education."<sup>3</sup> The pendulum had

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 318.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 326.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 48.

indeed swung back since the Schools Inquiry Commission of 1867.

The *Report* of the Bryce Commission is of considerable interest because it contains the germs of much of the educational progress that has been made in this country since the beginning of the twentieth century. The Commission also was fortunate in that their work contributed to the passing of an Act of Parliament of outstanding importance. But meanwhile other influences were at work to make comprehensive legislation imperative. The Liberal Government, which had appointed the Bryce Commission, went out of power in 1895, and was succeeded by the Conservatives, under the leadership of Lord Salisbury. Many of them were concerned about the difficulties which the voluntary schools were encountering in their endeavour to compete with the rate-aided board schools. The Vice-President of the Committee of Council on Education, Sir John Gorst, prepared a Bill in 1896 which proposed to make an extra 'special-aid grant' of 4s. a head available for voluntary schools; and this was to be paid to the county and county borough councils for them to distribute. The Cowper-Temple clause was to be abolished, and denominational religious instruction was to be allowed in board schools if a reasonable number of parents demanded it. The Bill also proposed to make the councils themselves, and not independent composite bodies on which they had a majority of members, the local authorities for secondary education. This was an improvement on the Bryce recommendations, for they would have implied three separate education authorities in each area—the school boards, the new secondary 'local education authority,' and the councils themselves for technical education. But the Bill encountered opposition from the supporters of the school boards, and also from nonconformists who objected to increased State grants for voluntary schools,

and to denominational teaching in board schools. It was therefore withdrawn; but the matter could not rest there.

In 1895 an office of Special Inquiries and Reports had been formed at the Education Department. One of its first acts was to issue a series of reports on the educational systems of foreign countries; the contrast between their logical and centralised schemes and our own chaos was evident. The assistant director of this office was Robert Morant, who was destined to play an important part in the educational fortunes of this country. He was determined to spare no effort to introduce some sort of order into the organisation of English education. He realised clearly that many of the larger school boards, aided by the rates, were giving secondary education to advanced pupils, whereas they were legally restricted to the field of elementary education. He drew attention to this fact in a sentence which he inserted in a report on education in Switzerland, of which he was the author; but it did not attract public attention. But the matter was soon brought to a head in another way. A Government auditor, named Cockerton, disallowed to the London School Board expenditure on science and art classes in higher-grade schools, and on evening continuation classes. He maintained that such expenditure was not sanctioned by the 1870 and subsequent Elementary Education Acts; and that a school board was competent to provide only elementary education. This Cockerton judgment was upheld by the Court of Appeal. A special emergency Act in 1901, renewed in the following year, legalised the position; but it was obvious that such a situation could not continue. In 1899 the Board of Education had replaced the Education Department and become the sole central authority for primary, secondary, and technical education alike; but the question of local control remained to be settled.

The solution was provided in 1902. After the end of the Boer War, which incidentally did much to justify the products of English elementary education since 1870, the Conservatives won a sweeping victory. One of their first acts was to bring in an Education Bill. It was sponsored by the Prime Minister, A. J. Balfour, himself; and he was ably seconded behind the scenes by Morant, who became Permanent Secretary to the newly formed Board of Education. In spite of bitter opposition on the part of Liberals and nonconformists, the Bill became law on December 20th, 1902.

The Act reorganised education on a municipal basis. The school boards scattered up and down England and Wales, where they had been 'filling up the gaps' in the voluntary system, were swept away. They were replaced by the county and county borough councils—120 of them—which became responsible for both secondary and elementary education; but the oversight of elementary education only was given to 'Part III' authorities,<sup>1</sup> consisting of boroughs with a population of over 10,000, and urban districts the population of which exceeded 20,000; they numbered 180 all told. The Councils, whether 'Part II' or 'Part III,' became for the purposes of the Act the 'local education authorities'—often abbreviated to L.E.A. Each was instructed to appoint an education committee, to which would be referred "all matters relating to the exercise by the council of their powers under this Act, except the power of raising a rate or borrowing money."<sup>2</sup> The majority of this committee were to be members of the Council, but other persons of educational or relevant experience were to be

<sup>1</sup> Part III of the Act deals with elementary and Part II with secondary education; but it should be noted that what was called a 'Part II Authority' was concerned with both types of education. The term 'elementary' was limited to schools with pupils not over sixteen years of age, and evening schools were excluded. (See Act, § 22.)

<sup>2</sup> *Education Act*, 1902, § 17 (2).

added and every education committee was required to include women members. It should be noted that the councils covered the whole country; there were no longer 'gaps' to fill. They had to supply elementary education in what had been board schools and were now called 'provided' schools, and to erect new schools where they were needed. But they had also—unlike the old school boards—to control and be responsible for secular instruction in what had hitherto been voluntary schools and were henceforth to be termed 'non-provided' schools. These non-provided, denominational schools were now eligible to receive rate aid, but the cost of capital expenditure on buildings, as well as of structural repairs and alterations, was thrown on the religious body to which the school belonged. The managers of a non-provided school retained the right of appointing and dismissing their teachers, subject to the approval of the L.E.A. on educational grounds; but one-third of the managers of a non-provided school had to be appointed by the authority. Religious instruction could be given in a provided school, as hitherto in a board school, subject to the Cowper-Temple clause. In a non-provided school it had to be "in accordance with the provisions (if any) of the trust deed relating thereto, and shall be under the control of the managers."<sup>1</sup> In both types of school there was to be a conscience clause and the possibility of withdrawal from religious worship or instruction.

As has been said, the Act of 1902, in accordance with the recommendations of the Bryce Commission, laid upon county and county borough councils a responsibility for secondary and higher education. Each local education authority was required to "consider the educational needs of their area and take such steps as seem to them desirable, after consultation with the Board of Education, to supply

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 7 (6).



or aid the supply of education other than elementary, and to promote the general co-ordination of all forms of education."<sup>1</sup> They were to "have regard to any existing supply of efficient schools and colleges, and to any steps already taken for the purposes of higher education under the Technical Instruction Acts, 1889 and 1891."<sup>2</sup> Their powers included the training of teachers, the providing of scholarships, and the paying of fees of students in colleges or hostels.

By the Act of 1902 a co-ordinated national system of education was at last introduced and the 'confusion arising from lack of organisation' was ended. But, like all Education Acts, it was largely a compromise. With its 'provided' and 'non-provided' schools it retained the 'dual system' which had been introduced by the 1870 Act. It also made a concession to local feeling and the supporters of school boards by setting up the distinction between Part II and Part III authorities. This may have helped to foster local enthusiasm for education, but it involved administrative difficulties; and these tended to increase as in course of time the frontiers between secondary and elementary education were gradually broken down.

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 2 (1). By the Welsh Intermediate Education Act of 1889, the Principality had already led the way in planning a national system of secondary schools linking the elementary schools with the university colleges.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 2 (2).



*PART E*  
EDUCATION SINCE 1902

## *Chapter XXIV*

### THE WORKING OF THE 1902 ACT

*Resistance and Progress. The Work of Morant. The New Secondary Schools.*

It was only in the teeth of strong opposition and with the application of the closure that the Education Act of 1902 had become law. But the struggle did not end there. Opposition still was offered not only by those who deplored the passing of the school boards, but still more by nonconformists who strongly objected to the extension of rate aid to voluntary schools. Most of these schools belonged to the Established Church; and in many rural areas especially the only available school was a Church of England school. Yet everyone had to pay rates for its support. The protagonist of the opposition in the House of Commons was David Lloyd George; outside he was seconded by a nonconformist minister named Dr. Clifford, who preached the doctrine of 'passive resistance.' Rather than pay the rates which aided voluntary schools, he and his followers suffered distraint to be made upon their goods. In Wales the counties and county boroughs went so far as to refuse to put the Act into operation. The situation had to be met by an Education (Local Authorities' Default) Act, passed in 1904, which provided that, if an authority failed to make adequate grants to voluntary schools in its area for maintaining their efficiency, the Board of Education could deduct from the grant payable to it such sums as were needed for the voluntary schools; and these sums would be paid over direct to the managers. This caused considerable ferment, and there was a danger that the whole educational system of Wales might be thrown into chaos; but Balfour stood his ground and the Welsh councils were compelled to yield. By the end of 1905 the Act was practically everywhere in

force. But the return of the Liberals to power in the same year brought the grievances of the passive resisters again to the forefront. Lloyd George, now President of the Board of Trade, announced that the first thing that the Government was going to do was to remedy the wrongs of the Education Act. The new President of the Board of Education, Augustine Birrell, whose father had been a Baptist minister, introduced a Bill in 1906 which, while recognising the councils as the local authorities for elementary and secondary education alike, proposed that "a school shall not be recognised as a public elementary school unless it is a school provided by the local education authority." This implied the abolition of public aid to voluntary schools. They could carry on only as private independent schools, unless they preferred to hand themselves over to the control of the local education authority. The only concession allowed was that 'special religious instruction' might be given in such schools on not more than two mornings a week. The Bill was so fundamentally amended by the House of Lords that the Government withdrew it. Another even more drastic attempt to cut the knot, made by McKenna in 1908, produced similar opposition and also proved abortive. But in spite of all these difficulties and disagreements, it was increasingly recognised, as the 1902 Act came gradually into force, that it had inaugurated a new era in English education. The general advance was so obvious that the difficulty of the 'religious question' died down to some extent. Although even yet it has not disappeared entirely, it has never since been so acute as it was in the yearly years of the present century.

The Act put education under municipal control, but it did not abolish the old 'dual system.' All the former board schools and most of the 'British' and nonconformist voluntary schools were transferred after 1902 to the local educa-

tion authorities and became 'provided' schools. But the L.E.A.s were also responsible for voluntary schools, except so far as the actual provision and repair of their buildings were concerned. This laid on the authorities a heavy burden, because they had to try to bring up these 'non-provided' schools to the standard of their own council schools. They were assisted by a rearrangement of the grant system. The Code of 1900 had abolished the separate grants for subjects, attendance, discipline, efficiency, etc., and had substituted a single 'block grant.'<sup>1</sup> The new system made it possible to secure some sort of equality as between schools; the poorer ones were less likely to be penalised than they had been under the old system. The L.E.A.s also began to carry out systematic surveys of school accommodation and facilities in their areas. The Board of Education *Report* for 1904-5 stated that over fifty reports of this type had been issued since the beginning of 1903, and that among the most valuable of them were those prepared by Professor Michael Sadler, who had by this time left the Office of Special Inquiries and Reports and was Professor of Education in the University of Manchester. Sadler's investigations dealt primarily with secondary education, but they were of great general interest and were widely read; and they helped to make L.E.A.s conscious of their duty and to stimulate them to perform it. Thus improvements were made, though the task was difficult because L.E.A.s had to deal with a very heterogeneous collection of schools. In 1908 the Board of Education exerted pressure on L.E.A.s by drawing up a 'Black List,' and encouraging them to eliminate their worst schools which were included in it. This has been a slow process. Too often school buildings, which were unsuitable to modern conditions, were so solidly built, or

<sup>1</sup> 'Subject' grants were retained for a few 'practical' courses, such as cooking and manual instruction.

inconveniently placed, that they resisted adaptation. But, for all that, improvement was made until it was checked by the first World War. In 1924 the Black List scheme was revived.

In other ways a new spirit was infused into English education after 1902; and this was largely the work of Morant, who was knighted for his services in 1907. He issued a series of regulations, in each of which he included a prefatory memorandum signed by himself. These covered not only elementary and secondary schools, but also the training of pupil-teachers who were to receive a general education in a secondary school for three or four years, with schoolfellows intended for other careers. But it is perhaps in his introduction to the Elementary School Code of 1904 that the new official attitude to education was most clearly seen. It is too long to quote in full,<sup>1</sup> but its opening words strike a new note: "The purpose of the Public Elementary School is to form and strengthen the character and to develop the intelligence of the children entrusted to it, and to make the best use of the school years available, in assisting both girls and boys, according to their different needs, to fit themselves, practically as well as intellectually, for the work of life." The conception of elementary education as a charity provided for the 'lower classes' is gone for ever. *The Times*, in a leading article, made the following comment: "The change is a momentous one. It means that our English Board of Education has definitely abandoned the old crude idea that its functions were merely financial and administrative—viz. to devise means by which the country might get tangible value for an expenditure more or less grudgingly bestowed; and that it has finally shaken off the misleading associations of the theory of 'payment by results.' For the first time the child, rather than the official

<sup>1</sup> It is given in Lowndes, *The Silent Social Revolution*, pp. 141-2.

or the tax-payer, is recognised as the most important consideration."<sup>1</sup>

The Code of 1904 was followed in 1905 by a *Handbook of Suggestions for the Consideration of Teachers and others engaged in the Work of Public Elementary Schools*. The title is significant; it is not 'instructions' or 'regulations,' but 'suggestions.' In a comprehensive introduction, which was written by Morant himself, and which preceded detailed suggestions on teaching methods, he stresses the significance of the teacher's part in the training of character, the value of co-operation with other local social agencies and with the home, and the importance of physical welfare. The *Handbook* has been periodically revised since its first appearance in 1905, and it is this—and not a set of official instructions—which gives the teacher guidance in his work. There is no country in which the teacher in the State schools has more freedom than he has in England; but as the *Handbook* wisely says: "Freedom implies a corresponding responsibility in its use." The virtual abolition of 'payment by results,' made possible by the introduction of the 'block grant' in 1900, also involved a modification in the duties of the Board's inspectors. It was no longer their duty to examine children and assess grants on the results. They now had greater freedom to advise and help, and to disseminate new ideas. It took a long time to break down the old attitude of distrust and hostility to the H.M.I., which the old system had tended to encourage; but inspectors' visits are no longer regarded as inquisitorial visitations. As Mr. Lowndes, writing in 1937, said: "How great this change has been is only perhaps appreciated by the older members of H.M. Inspectorate and by teachers who began their career as pupil-teachers in the 1890's and are now retiring from the profession."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by Allen, *Sir Robert Morant*, pp. 213-14.

<sup>2</sup> *The Silent Social Revolution*, p. 137.



In the field of secondary education the Act of 1902 perpetuated a 'dual system,' as well as in that of elementary education; but it was of a different kind. On the one hand were the old endowed grammar schools, which had hitherto received no assistance from public funds, but were now aided by L.E.A.s. After 1902 there also came into existence a number of municipal or county secondary schools, founded and maintained by the councils. In some cases such schools—as has already been said—were evolved out of existing higher-grade or organised science schools, or pupil-teacher centres. The fact that secondary schools were now eligible to receive grants made it necessary for the Board of Education to determine what exactly a 'secondary school' was. In the *Regulations for Secondary Schools* issued in 1904 it was defined as "a Day or Boarding School offering to each of its scholars, up to and beyond the age of 16, a general education, physical, mental and moral, given through a complete graded course of instruction, of wider scope and more advanced degree than that given in Elementary Schools." The course had to last not less than four years and was to include English subjects, at least one language other than English, mathematics and science, and drawing. Provision was also to be made for manual training and physical exercises. Music was not mentioned; but "where two languages other than English are taken, and Latin is not one of them, the Board will require to be satisfied that the omission of Latin is for the advantage of the School." Thus the curriculum prescribed for secondary schools of all types, including those which had recently been founded or had been evolved from forms of higher elementary or technical education, was "based wholly on the tradition of the Grammar Schools and the Public Schools. Furthermore, the concept of a general education which underlies these Regulations was divorced from the idea of technical

or quasi-technical education, though in reality much of the education described as 'liberal' or 'general' was itself vocational education for the 'liberal' professions."<sup>1</sup> The 'academic' bias which was thus given to the concept of secondary education has tended to persist; and although much has been done since 1904 to widen this concept, progress has been slower than it might have been.

The founding of new secondary schools and the taking over of other schools of this type and making them efficient proved to be an expensive process. The L.E.A.s were anxious to keep fees low, but at first they were empowered to raise only a 2*d.* rate for higher education, except by special consent of the Local Government Board.<sup>2</sup> The situation was eased in 1907. In that year a scholarship system was introduced which greatly facilitated the access to secondary education of promising children from elementary schools. All grant-aided secondary schools were now to admit, as free-place scholars, pupils who had spent at least two years at a public elementary school. The number of such pupils was to be not less than 25 per cent. of the total entry to the secondary school in the previous year. A grant of £5 per pupil was payable. To ensure that this scholarship system would not have the effect of lowering the standard of work in the secondary schools it was provided that candidates for free places should pass an entrance test appropriate to their age and previous education. It was intended as a qualifying examination; but the subsequent development of the demand for secondary-school education made the test a highly competitive one. Its repercussions on both the work of the junior elementary school, and on the problem of selection for secondary education, were destined to cause many difficulties later on. The limit of

<sup>1</sup> R. F. Young, *Historical Introduction to Spens Report*, pp. 66-7.

<sup>2</sup> See *Education Act*, 1902, § 2.

25 per cent. of the previous year's entry was subsequently raised; and even before fees were finally abolished in secondary schools by the 1944 Act, there were in existence some schools where this was the case. On the other hand, the economy campaign of 1932 involved a modification of the free-place system. In that year 'free places' became 'special places.' The parents of elementary-school pupils who had been selected by examination for admission to a secondary school were required to pay fees, if they could afford to do so; and L.E.A.s were instructed to draw up scales based on the parents' income. The free-place system caused some uneasiness at first, especially among schools and parents who were conscious of their own social exclusiveness; but on the whole the scheme worked well and the number of ex-elementary-school pupils in secondary schools rapidly increased. The introduction of the bursary system, whereby intending teachers in elementary schools were encouraged to attend a secondary school and stay there till the age of seventeen or eighteen,<sup>1</sup> also brought a large number of pupils into secondary schools aided or maintained by L.E.A.s.

Elderly critics, who base their censures of schools on vague recollections of their youth, do not always realise the very marked progress which has been made in curricula and methods of teaching since the beginning of the present century. This is, perhaps, particularly true of the secondary school. There are various reasons for this. The curriculum has been widened, and there may now even be a danger of sacrificing depth for breadth. New subjects, such as biology, Spanish, economics, civics, have been introduced. The reasons are partly social and partly economic, but they are due also in some measure to the reaction of the universities on secondary schools. The institution, for example, of

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 218.

new honours courses in geography or of degrees in commerce and agriculture has not been without its effect on schools. Again, the development of University Departments of Education, the improvement of training-college courses, the growing interest in educational psychology and in the theory of education, as well as in method—all this has led to greatly increased technical efficiency among teachers. It is noteworthy that nearly all treatises dealing specifically with the “special methods” of the various school subjects have been written since the beginning of the present century. Hitherto a chapter in a comprehensive manual was deemed sufficient. The growth of new schools, not hampered by tradition, has also helped to foster experiment. The Dalton Plan and the Project Method, for example, even when they have not been adopted in their entirety, have diversified and vitalised the old routine of class-teaching. The use of broadcasts, the gramophone, and the epidiascope has also proved valuable. Experiments in self-government have helped to displace conventional methods of discipline and organisation. In fact, there has been in every department of the school’s life a growth of freedom and flexibility. The Classics have lost much of their old predominance. Latin is no longer prescribed by official regulations as the second foreign language in a secondary school, and Greek, in particular, has lost much ground; but both subjects are taught more intelligently than they were under the régime of ‘gerund-grinding.’ Modern languages owe much to the use of phonetics and especially to the direct method. Geometry has replaced ‘Euclid.’ Natural science in the early days of South Kensington too often consisted largely of the memorising of text-books with little or no practical work; it is now taught in properly equipped laboratories. English grammar as a school subject is no longer formal, but functional. Geography,

instead of being a subject which required little more than the getting by heart of lists of capes and bays, is now a scientific study of the interaction of man and his environment.

The broadening of the curriculum has been due largely to the influence and example of individual headmasters, such as Taring of Uppingham, Sanderson of Oundle, or Howson of Holt—and perhaps even more to the great headmistresses. Improvements in teaching method owe much to men like A. J. Herbertson, with his scheme of geographical 'regions,' M. W. Keatinge, who utilised documents in the teaching of history, and W. H. D. Rouse, who introduced the direct method into the teaching of Classics. The writings of Sir John Adams have also dealt largely with matters of technique.<sup>1</sup> The work of all these men was done in the first two or three decades of the twentieth century. The same period has also seen the most valuable co-operation of the Board of Education in the same field. Not only in their *Suggestions for Teachers* have they given detailed advice as to the teaching of various school subjects, but they have also issued a series of handbooks for specialist teachers in secondary schools. Four special committees<sup>2</sup> were set up to enquire into the position of natural science, modern languages, Classics and English, in the educational system. Those dealing with the first two subjects reported in 1918, and the other two in 1921. In addition to these reports the Board itself has issued from time to time numerous pamphlets dealing with method, organisation, and curriculum. The example has been followed by several of the professional societies. The Assistant Masters' Association, for instance, has issued admirable memoranda on the teaching of English, mathematics,

<sup>1</sup> E.g. *Exposition and Illustration in Teaching* (1909); *The New Teaching* (1918); *Modern Developments in Educational Practice* (1922); *Errors in School* (1927).

<sup>2</sup> They were actually appointed by the Prime Minister.

history, modern languages, and geography. All this activity is at once an evidence of, and a stimulus to, that increasing efficiency of teaching technique and of school organisation which has marked English education since 1902.

## Chapter XXV

### THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE SPECIAL SERVICES

Special Schools and Health Education. Influence of Montessori. Nursery Schools.

ALONGSIDE the development of the national system of education there has been a notable expansion of subsidiary services dealing with the health and physical condition of the children in the nation's schools. But it was only gradually, after education had become compulsory, that administrators began to realise how many children were handicapped by ill-health, deformities, and malnutrition. For this reason school health services are a comparatively recent development, though they have made immense strides, especially since 1902. As far back as 1893 an Elementary Education (Blind and Deaf Children) Act had made it the duty of school boards to provide education for blind and deaf children, between the ages of seven and sixteen, resident in their areas. They were to be accommodated in schools certified by the Education Department as suitable for the purpose. As a result day schools and institutions for such children were established, and existing ones improved, in various parts of the country. Already, in 1892, schools for mental defectives had been opened in Leicester and London. In 1899 an Act empowered authorities to ascertain the number of children who were epileptic and mentally defective, and to provide special instruction for them. By further legislation in 1914 L.E.A.s were compelled to make suitable provision for mentally defective and epileptic children. Of recent years it has become a general practice to distinguish mental defectives from educationally 'backward' children, whose intelligence quotients may range from about seventy upwards.<sup>1</sup> A Mental Deficiency Committee, which issued its report in 1929, suggested that

<sup>1</sup> See Burt, *The Backward Child*, pp. 84-5.

both types should be regarded as one unit, and, as far as possible, educated in ordinary schools. The sorting would be done by mental tests and the special school for sub-normal children would disappear; it would be replaced by 'special' forms in an ordinary school.<sup>1</sup> Segregation may be bad both for the mentally defective and for the dull or retarded child; and parents resent having to send their offspring to what they sometimes call the 'loony' school. But many teachers feel that there are serious difficulties in dealing with abnormal children in schools which are designed for those who are normal. What can be done in a 'special' school, when it is administered with vision and enthusiasm, is shown in the case of Lankhills School, near Winchester; and such achievements are not without their significance for the education of normal children.<sup>2</sup>

The mentally defective child and the blind or deaf-mute are so conspicuous and so difficult to deal with educationally that they have formed classes apart and have called for special treatment. But there remains the case of the child who can attend the ordinary school, but who is handicapped by bad health, neglect, lack of proper nourishment, poor physique, defective teeth or eyesight. School medical inspection was started in London in 1890 and in Bradford in 1893; but it was the Boer War (1899-1902) which forcefully directed public attention to the necessity for improving the national health. An Inter-Departmental Committee on Physical Deterioration in 1904 drew attention to the need for a systematic medical examination of school children. In 1907 a clause in the Education (Administrative Provisions) Act laid upon L.E.A.s "the duty to provide for the medical

<sup>1</sup> See especially §§ 106 and 156-62 of *Report of the Mental Deficiency Committee* (1929).

<sup>2</sup> See Duncan, *The Education of the Ordinary Child*.



inspection of children immediately before, or at the time of, or as soon as possible after, their admission to a public elementary school, and on such other occasions as the Board of Education direct, and the power to make such arrangements as may be sanctioned by the Board of Education for attending to the health and physical condition of the children educated in public elementary schools.”<sup>1</sup> Morant, who had always been interested in questions of public health and fully realised its educational implications, promptly established a Medical Branch of the Board of Education. This was put in the charge of Dr. (afterwards Sir George) Newman. The importance of the work which he did for the health of schoolchildren from the time of his appointment till his retirement in 1935 can hardly be overestimated. His annual reports from 1908 onwards also did much to keep alive public interest in the school medical service. Thus was developed a State system of school medical inspection and a regular school medical service. At first the work was confined to the *inspection* of schoolchildren, but the L.E.A.s were not called upon to provide treatment of any kind. Lowndes<sup>2</sup> says that this was due to the Victorian fear of ‘pauperising’ parents and still more to avoid antagonising private practitioners. But owing to the influence of teachers and the work of voluntary Care Committees much was done even without compulsion. A consolidating Education Act of 1921 turned the L.E.A.s’ power of making arrangements for attending to the health and physical condition of schoolchildren into a duty; but any treatment provided was to be charged to the parents if their means permitted. The Fisher Act of 1918 carried medical inspection and treatment into the field of secondary and continuative education. The work of the school medical

<sup>1</sup> Education (Administrative Provisions) Act, 1907, § 13 (b)

<sup>2</sup> *The Silent Social Revolution*, p. 229.

officer has been supplemented by the appointment of school nurses and dentists. This work was designed to be, so far as possible, preventive, and the central authority paid a 50 per cent. grant on expenditure which was incurred.

If children are ill-nourished, they cannot profit by the teaching which is given them. It has therefore become increasingly evident that health treatment must be seconded, where necessary, by the provision of meals. An Act of 1906 laid it down that if children were unable, through lack of food, to profit by the education given in a public elementary school, the local education authority might supply them with meals. Contributions were to be collected, so far as was possible, from the parents, but this school feeding was not to be classed as poor-law relief. The scope of this Act was extended during the first World War, and it has been still further developed in recent years.

Health education should be not merely palliative, or even preventive, but still more positive. The increasing realisation of this fact has been shown by the development of all kinds of physical activity, designed not merely to strengthen the bodies of pupils, but also as an integral part of the 'education of the whole man.' Here again something is due to the influence of Morant. In a letter written in 1906 he says: "For myself I have for some time come to feel that for the good of the children and the people, what subjects are taught and how they are taught do not matter anything like so much as attention to the physical condition of the scholars and the teacher."<sup>1</sup> Military drill had appeared in the Code of 1871, and ex-soldiers were employed to give this kind of instruction. It survived in the secondary schools well into the twentieth century. But more sensible methods of physical education were suggested in a syllabus issued by the Board of Education in 1909. This was based largely on

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by Allen, *Sir Robert Morant*, p. 231.

the practice of Sweden and Denmark, where the influence of P. H. Ling (1776-1839) had transformed the teaching of gymnastics. The Board also appointed special inspectors of 'physical exercises,' and under their expert guidance physical training has progressed along definitely educative lines. For long specialists had to go to Sweden or Denmark for training; but in 1885 a college for women who wished to become physical-training instructors was opened at Dartford. It was not until 1933 that a similar training college became available for men. But for the non-specialist student physical training has been a compulsory subject in all training colleges since 1909. The development of physical education in more recent years will be discussed later. It has been due not only to what have been by some people regarded as military necessities, but also to greater realisation of the fact that education is as much a matter of the body as of the mind, and that schools should be equally concerned with both. We have, in fact, revived the teaching of the ancient Greeks on this matter.

The normal English method of physical education is not so much through set exercises, however scientifically these have been devised, but rather through games—whether 'organised' or not. In the early part of the nineteenth century these had been tolerated in the boarding schools as a method of keeping boys out of mischief in their spare time. But progressive headmasters, like Thring, saw the educative value of games; and this was more and more widely recognised in schools of all kinds. Most of the new secondary schools, which came into existence as a result of the 1902 Act, were provided with playing-fields and made full provision for organised games. This movement reacted on the elementary schools. In 1906 the Board of Education allowed organised games to be played during school hours, and public parks and open spaces have been utilised for the

purpose. Instruction in swimming at the local baths has also been provided as part of the school curriculum. Some of the newer elementary schools, provided by L.E.A.s, have their own playing-fields; but even so there has been, and still is, a considerable shortage of facilities, not only for children at school, but even more for young people who are no longer under full-time instruction. It was to meet the needs of such as these, in particular, that the National Playing Fields Association was founded in 1925.

Another aspect of the same movement was the establishment of evening play-centres. A pioneer in this work was the Children's Happy Evenings Association, which had started its operations in 1888. By 1914 there were ninety-four centres in London and forty-one in the Provinces where children in poor districts could find opportunities for play after school hours. Later the Play Centres Association, due largely to Mrs. Humphry Ward, used school premises for two hours in the evening on five days a week, so as to provide play facilities. The Education (Administrative Provisions) Act of 1907 included a clause empowering L.E.A.s to provide such centres or to aid voluntary agencies in providing them; and in 1917 State grants were made available for this purpose. This led to an increase in the number of play centres, and by the end of March 1918 they totalled 171. These centres not only provided for organised games, but also for singing and dancing, and for painting, needlework, and handicrafts. Opportunities were also given for children to read or play quietly with toys on their own initiative.

It may not be out of place in this context to discuss another movement which has affinities with those which have already been described. This is the work and the influence in this country of Maria Montessori. Her theories owe much to those of Froebel, but she put them into practice

at first among mentally defective children, and one of her chief interests is the health and physical freedom of children, especially those of the earliest age. After qualifying as a doctor at the University of Rome, she worked in a psychiatric clinic and became interested in feeble-minded children. She came to the conclusion that they needed education even more than medical treatment. For two years (1898-1900) she ran a school for such children, working in it herself and training teachers for the work. Her experience led her to the belief that the methods which she had found most successful in dealing with feeble-minded children would be quite applicable to those who were normal, and that ordinary schools needed the sort of transformation which she had accomplished in her own 'special' school. At last there occurred an opportunity of putting her theories to the test. An association which was dealing with the housing problem in Rome proposed that each tenement should have attached to it a school in which the children, between the ages of three and seven, would be under the supervision of a teacher who would also live in the tenement. Dr. Montessori was invited to co-operate in the scheme. The first Casa dei Bambini, or 'Children's House,' was opened in 1907; and although the experiment lasted only till 1911, it amply proved the success of Montessori methods in the case of normal children. These methods are based on sense-training, and, like Froebel, Dr. Montessori lays stress on the use of pieces of apparatus which she has devised. The child is also given complete freedom and there are no class-methods. The teacher's part is to observe and direct, but not control. Dr. Montessori feels that under modern conditions, especially where the mother has to go out to work, the home cannot educate properly, and, if so, the school must make good the deficiencies. The Children's House was designed to "com-

<sup>1</sup> Compare the views of Mr. Duncan (see *The Education of the Ordinary Child*).

munise the maternal functions," as so many other social activities have been communised.

All these doctrines may—and indeed do—provoke criticism, but the work and theories of Dr. Montessori have stimulated much interest, particularly in this country and in America. They link up with a movement which has come increasingly into prominence since the beginning of the present century. The experience of the School Medical Service showed that little attention was available for children of pre-school age—i.e. from about two to five. Yet this is a stage at which medical supervision is of paramount importance. It is also a period when desirable habits, both personal and social, are most easily acquired. As Sir George Newman had repeatedly pointed out in his annual reports, the years below five are both physically and psychologically the crucial age. But there are many homes where conditions make adequate medical and educational supervision impossible. It is for reasons such as these that nursery schools and nursery classes have come into existence. The movement owes much to the two sisters, Rachel and Margaret McMillan. For years they worked, with little encouragement, to secure the provision of health centres for poor children, and of school meals and regular medical inspection. The passing of the Education (Provision of Meals) Act in 1906, and of the Act of 1907, which provided for medical inspection, was due in no small measure to their efforts. In 1914 Rachel McMillan started an open-air nursery school at Deptford. In such schools children from two to five years of age spend the whole day and are provided with meals. They are given full opportunity for play and rest and for the development of good and useful habits. There is, of course, no formal instruction, though some beginnings may be made informally; and perhaps the term '*nursery school*' is somewhat misleading in this context. An

alternative to the independent nursery school is the nursery class attached to an infant school.

Nursery schools in their early stages were fostered largely by voluntary effort. The Fisher Act of 1918 made it permissive for L.E.A.s to set up such schools, and grants for this purpose were offered in 1919; but not many of them availed themselves of this power. In 1933 the Consultative Committee of the Board of Education, under Sir W. H. Hadow's chairmanship, issued a *Report on Infant and Nursery Schools*.<sup>1</sup> It proposed to retain the statutory lower age limit for compulsory school attendance, but it regarded the nursery school as "a desirable adjunct to the national system of education. In districts where the housing and general economic conditions are seriously below the average, a nursery school should, if possible, be provided. . . . Apart from purely social and economic considerations model nursery schools for children from the age of two onwards are educationally desirable."<sup>2</sup> One of the members of the Committee, Miss Freda Hawtrey, in a note appended to the *Report*, expressed the view that the nursery school would be of more value if it could keep its children till seven, the age when they would pass into the upper department of a primary school.<sup>3</sup> This is a view which has gained increasing acceptance and is advocated by the Nursery School Association, which was first formed, with Margaret McMillan as its president, in 1923. The conditions obtaining during the second World War speeded up the nursery-school movement, and further reference will be made to it. It is now felt in some quarters that nursery-school education should be available for children of all types and all classes. Teachers for nursery-school work are trained at the Rachel

<sup>1</sup> There is a good historical summary of the nursery-school movement in England in pp. 33-46 of this *Report*.

<sup>2</sup> *Report on Infant and Nursery Schools*, pp. 187-8.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 196.

McMillan College, Deptford, and at the Froebel Educational Institute. Some other training colleges and some university training departments also provide special courses for preparing students to become teachers in nursery or infant schools.



## Chapter XXVI

### A NEW CONCEPTION OF 'SECONDARY' EDUCATION

The Fisher Act and the *Hadow Report*. Reorganisation and the 1936 Act.

THE first World War of 1914-18 had considerable repercussions on national education. It altered the home conditions of many children; it weakened the staffing in many schools, because men teachers were taken away on military service; and it led to drastic economies in school building and equipment. But the schools rose to the occasion. Children gave help in social and agricultural work and formed war-savings associations. Perhaps their greatest contribution was 'business as usual' in spite of the great difficulties with which they had to contend. The whole population, which for the most part had been educated in the elementary schools, responded to the calls which the war made upon it, both in and out of the army; and this resulted in a more widely spread appreciation of the true value and significance of education. As Mr. H. A. L. Fisher said in his speech on the Education Estimates on April 19th, 1917: "If anyone had doubted the value of our elementary schools, that doubt must have been dispelled by the experience of the war."<sup>1</sup> Thus it was realised that education would play a leading part in the work of reconstruction when the war was over.

All these aspirations were gathered up in an Education Bill which was passed into law on August 8th, 1918—before the war was over and while its issue was still uncertain. The Fisher Act—for it is usually known by the name of the President of the Board of Education who sponsored it—affected many departments of the national

<sup>1</sup> *Parliamentary Debates*, Fifth Series, vol. xcii, 1893. (Quoted by Birchenaugh, *History of Elementary Education*, p. 212.) The whole speech is worth reading.

system of education. It extended the powers of local authorities and gave them stimulus to co-operate. They "may and shall, when required by the Board of Education, submit to the Board schemes showing the mode in which the duties and powers under the Education Acts are to be performed and exercised, whether separately or in co-operation with other authorities."<sup>1</sup> The system of grants was modified; "the total sums paid to a Local Education Authority . . . shall not be less than one-half of the net expenditure of the Authority recognised by the Board of Education."<sup>2</sup> Fees in elementary schools were abolished and—as has already been pointed out—L.E.A.s were empowered to supply, or aid the supply of, nursery schools and nursery classes "for children over two and under five years of age, or such later age as may be approved by the Board of Education, whose attendance at such a school is necessary or desirable for their healthy physical and mental development."<sup>3</sup> Local authorities were also permitted, with the Board's approval, to provide, maintain, or assist "(a) holiday or school camps, especially for young persons attending continuation schools; (b) centres and equipment for physical training, playing-fields . . . school baths, school swimming-baths; (c) other facilities for social and physical training in the day or evening."<sup>4</sup> The employment of children under the age of twelve was entirely forbidden; and the employment of those over this age—such as performers in entertainments or newspaper boys—was strictly regulated. Medical inspection was extended from elementary to secondary and continuative education.

But the most important provisions of the Act—which in the event remained almost entirely inoperative—were those empowering L.E.A.s to raise the upper age limit of

<sup>1</sup> *Education Act*, 1918, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 44.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 19 (a).

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 17.

compulsory full-time school attendance to fifteen,<sup>1</sup> and the institution of day continuation schools. The latter were to be available without fees for boys and girls up to the age of sixteen (after seven years, up to eighteen) who had left school. Attendance was to be compulsory for 320 hours in the year, though this total might during the preliminary seven years be reduced to 280 hours if the L.E.A. so decided. Thus the 'young person' would spend part of his time in industry and part at an institution of continuative education. This would provide a valuable link between school and industry, and would ease the transition from the one to the other for the young worker. The scheme was to take effect from an 'appointed day,' which would be settled by the Board with each separate L.E.A., taking into account its preparedness to operate the system. But there were many difficulties. Employers were not always willing to co-operate, and it was not easy for L.E.A.s to find the necessary school accommodation and teachers. However, a start was made in some places. London and West Ham, for example, worked the scheme for a time, but generally it hung fire. Rugby alone succeeded in implementing this section of the Fisher Act and carrying it forward;<sup>2</sup> but several other big towns have run voluntary continuation schools, and some of the great industrial firms have also introduced continuation schemes for their young employees. But with exceptions such as these the project of part-time continuative education, like that of raising the school-leaving age, went into 'cold storage' for the time being.

The 1918 Act contains the seeds of reform which have begun to germinate after lying dormant for some time; in particular it adumbrated the nursery school and the day continuation school as integral parts of the national system

<sup>1</sup> Half-time and other exemptions were abolished, and attendance was everywhere made compulsory up to the end of the term in which the age of fourteen was reached.

<sup>2</sup> See Kitchen, *From Learning to Earning*.

of education, and it pointed the way to the raising of the leaving age. The fact that it remained in part ineffective was due to post-war financial stringency. In 1921 a Committee on National Expenditure, under the chairmanship of Sir Eric Geddes, recommended that grants to education should be reduced by about a third. This put an end to educational developments. Teachers were also made to suffer by having their salaries reduced and their pension scheme put on a contributory basis. The 'Geddes Axe,' as it was called, "led to a meticulous examination of local expenditure and the unnecessary holding up of the programmes of local authorities, to absurd economies on buildings and staff and to the indefinite postponement of continuation schools."<sup>1</sup> In the event many of the so-called 'economies' proved ill-advised and expensive, and there was some reaction when the Labour Party came into power in 1924. This party has always regarded education as one of the most important agents of social reform; and as part of that reform it had advocated 'secondary education for all.' But 'secondary' in this context could not mean the academic type of education which was given in the endowed grammar or public schools. Dr. Tawney, a university teacher of economics and a prominent exponent of socialism, made clear the implications of the slogan. "The Labour Party," he says, "is convinced that the only policy which is at once educationally sound and suited to a democratic community is one under which primary education and secondary education are organized as two stages in a single continuous process; secondary education being the education of the adolescent and primary education being education preparatory thereto."<sup>2</sup>

To implement this scheme the Consultative Committee of the Board of Education were asked to review the experi-

<sup>1</sup> Birchenough, *History of Elementary Education*, pp. 239-40.

<sup>2</sup> Tawney, *Secondary Education for All*, p. 7.

ments in post-primary education which had been made in the existing 'elementary' system, and "to consider and report upon the organisation, objective, and curriculum of courses of study suitable for children who will remain in full-time attendance at schools, other than Secondary Schools" (here the term was used in its contemporary sense), "up to the age of fifteen, regard being had on the one hand to the requirements of a good general education and the desirability of providing a reasonable variety of curriculum, so far as is practicable, for children of varying tastes and abilities, and on the other to the probable occupations of the pupils in commerce, industry, and agriculture."<sup>1</sup>

The *Report on The Education of the Adolescent*, which the Committee issued in 1926, is usually known by the name of the chairman, Sir W. H. Hadow. The essence of the Hadow plan was to make secondary education not, as hitherto, a privilege restricted to some 10 per cent. of the school population, but the normal course for all children between the ages of eleven and fourteen—or fifteen when the leaving age was raised. Thus there would be a complete break in school life between the primary and the post-primary school; and this would occur at about the age of 'eleven plus.' The post-primary school would have a fresh organisation and curriculum, and the old sequence of standards from I to VII, ambling on without any fresh orientation from the ages of seven to fourteen, would be abolished. Thus children would leave the primary school at eleven plus and then be drafted to another type of school suited to their individual needs and attainments. For this reason several types of post-primary (or 'secondary' in the new sense<sup>2</sup>) school would be needed. The first would be what the Hadow *Report* proposed to call the 'grammar school.' This would

<sup>1</sup> *Report on The Education of the Adolescent*, p. iv.

<sup>2</sup> Hadow *Report*, pp. 97-9.

include all schools of the academic type, whether old endowed foundations, or municipal or county secondary schools such as had come into existence since the 1902 Act. These would "pursue in the main a predominantly literary or scientific curriculum."<sup>1</sup> Secondly, there would be 'modern schools,' analogous to the existing selective or non-selective central schools. These 'central schools' had been started in London in 1911 and in Manchester in the following year. They were designed as a kind of higher elementary school, fed by several contributory schools, for pupils aged eleven to fifteen, and their curriculum, although it had a commercial or industrial bias, was not narrowly vocational. The scheme had not spread, and it had not been encouraged by the Board of Education; but the Hadow Committee realised its importance. They suggested that the new 'modern' schools should give "at least a four-years course from the age of eleven plus, with a 'realistic' or practical trend in the last two years."<sup>2</sup> These schools could be either selective or non-selective. Finally, where conditions made the provision of such schools impossible, there should be "departments or classes within Public Elementary Schools, providing post-primary education for children who do not go to any of the above-mentioned types of Schools."<sup>3</sup> These would be known as 'senior classes.' In addition, there should be junior technical and trade schools, which the Hadow Committee considered to be "doing most valuable work and should be developed so far as is possible in accordance with the needs and requirements of certain local industries."<sup>4</sup> The normal age for entry to such schools would remain at thirteen plus. Schools of this type had been developing slowly since the early years of the twentieth century. In 1905 grants had been made available for 'day

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 99.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 95.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 96.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 66. For Junior Technical Schools see *infra*, pp. 318-321.

technical classes,' organised for pupils who had completed their elementary education. It was not until 1913, that the junior technical school was recognised as a separate type, giving a course lasting two or three years from the age of thirteen.

The Hadow *Report* thus proposed that primary education should end at eleven plus; the term 'elementary' would disappear. The Consultative Committee thought that "there is a tide which begins to rise in the veins of youth at the age of eleven or twelve,"<sup>1</sup> and it was for this reason that they proposed to make the transfer at that age. The wisdom of a hard-and-fast rule of this kind has frequently been questioned.<sup>2</sup> Mental and chronological ages frequently do not coincide; and in any case it has been felt by many competent critics<sup>3</sup> that another age of transfer would be indicated. However, the Hadow *Report* standardised the transfer at eleven plus—for better or worse. At that age the child would be drafted either to an academic grammar school or to a more realistic and practical modern school, whether selective or non-selective; if this was impossible, he would go into a senior class. The curriculum in the modern school or the senior class would not be rigid, and might admit of some 'bias' as determined by local conditions; but generally it would be of the same type. At the age of thirteen plus some pupils from these schools could be drafted to junior technical schools. The problem which immediately followed was how to make this selection. "For this purpose," says the *Report*, "a written examination should be held, and also, wherever possible, an oral examination. A written psychological test might also be specially

<sup>1</sup> Hadow *Report*, p. xix.

<sup>2</sup> See, for example, Burt, *British Journal of Educational Psychology*, November 1943, p. 126.

<sup>3</sup> E.g. Sir Fred Clarke (in *Education and Social Change*, pp. 50-3), who advocates two breaks, one about nine, and one about thirteen.

employed in dealing with border-line cases, or where a discrepancy has been observed between the result of the written examination and the teacher's estimate of proficiency."<sup>1</sup> Adequate arrangements should be made for transfer, if it afterwards seemed indicated, from modern to grammar schools at the age of twelve or thirteen, and conversely from grammar schools to modern or junior technical schools. It was also suggested that a new leaving examination should be "framed to meet the needs of pupils in selective and non-selective Modern Schools and in the Senior Classes which retain some of their pupils to the age of fifteen."<sup>2</sup> All this meant that an entirely new meaning had been given to the term 'secondary.' Nothing is clearer than the intention of the Hadow Committee to regard all types of post-primary school as institutions of equal rank. "We regard it as most important," they say, "that the new Modern Schools and Senior Classes should not become inferior 'secondary' schools";<sup>3</sup> and again: "This growth [i.e. of modern schools] will run side by side with, but in no sense counter to, the growth of secondary schools; and while it will differ in kind, it will not be inferior in its promise or quality."<sup>4</sup> Much progress has been made since 1926 in the popularisation of the contention, but we are still far from realising it completely, and even farther from giving it full expression.

The importance of the Hadow *Report* was generally recognised. It was followed up in 1928 by a most helpful pamphlet issued by the Board of Education and entitled *The New Prospect in Education*. This dealt with the problems involved in reorganisation and gave an account of schemes which were already in operation. But there were difficulties in the way of implementing the Hadow scheme. In order to

<sup>1</sup> Hadow *Report*, p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 179.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 108.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*



reconstitute post-primary schools as separate entities, L.E.A.s had to adapt existing buildings or provide new ones; but a 50 per cent. Exchequer grant made for the purpose for a period of three years from September 1st, 1929, had to be withdrawn in 1931 owing to financial stringency. However, the work of reorganisation went ahead slowly, and by 1938 63·5 per cent. of pupils over the age of eleven were in reorganised schools. In country areas travelling was often a problem. If a small village all-standard school were converted into a junior school, the post-primary school, which the elder children would have to attend, might be some distance away. Complications also arose out of the 'dual system.' If an all-standard Church of England school were 'decapitated' and became a junior school, and no senior Church of England school were accessible, those children who left at the age of eleven plus might have to be drafted to a post-primary council school. As the voluntary bodies had to provide the school buildings and carry out the necessary adaptations, reorganisation involved particularly heavy burdens for them, especially if, in addition to all this, the school-leaving age—as was generally hoped—were raised to fifteen.

There were many attempts to meet this situation. Finally, in 1936, an Education Act was passed to deal with these difficulties and make possible reorganisation in a complete form. The school-leaving age was to be raised to fifteen on September 1st, 1939; but the effect of this provision was largely nullified by allowing exemptions in the case of children over the age of fourteen who were entering what was called 'beneficial employment.' L.E.A.s were empowered to make grants of not less than 50 per cent., nor more than 75 per cent., of the cost of school buildings for non-provided schools "for the benefit of senior children." In these schools, which were to be known as 'special agreement schools,'

denominational religious instruction was to be given by 'reserved' teachers, who would have denominational qualifications for this work. They were to be appointed by the L.E.A., but school managers could veto such appointments if they were not satisfied as to the candidates' suitability in this respect. These new non-provided schools were at the same time to give non-denominational religious teaching on an 'agreed syllabus'<sup>1</sup> to children whose parents wished them to have it, but who could not conveniently attend a council school provided by the L.E.A. Conversely, if a denominational non-provided school were not available, a parent might withdraw his child from religious instruction on an agreed syllabus, given in a council school, in order that he might receive denominational teaching of a kind not given in such a school. Voluntary bodies which desired to apply for building grants under this Act were required to submit their schemes by March 1st, 1938. Although this date was afterwards put forward, the events of the next few years rendered the 1936 Education Act much less successful than had been hoped.

<sup>1</sup> I.e. a syllabus of religious instruction of a non-denominational character, agreed upon by local representatives of the Established Church and the Nonconformist Churches.

## Chapter XXVII

### PUBLIC AND PRIVATE SCHOOLS

The Closed System and its Critics. The Fleming *Report*. Kindergartens; the P.N.E.U.; Roman Catholic Schools; 'Progressive' Schools.

THE Act of 1902 brought the secondary schools into the national system of education and the Hadow *Report* of 1926 greatly widened our conception of what secondary education should mean. But, in spite of the expansion of the national system since the beginning of the century, public and private schools still flourish and still remain largely independent of State control, though they have been more or less influenced by ideas and movements from inside the State system. In 1936, of the 592,715 pupils receiving secondary education, about 6 per cent. were in public or preparatory schools. The public schools are for the most part boarding schools<sup>1</sup> and non-local in character. During the latter part of the nineteenth century they began, owing to pressure of numbers, to give up taking young boys and to adopt an entry age of about thirteen. Some public schools—as, for example, St. Paul's—have established separate preparatory departments; but it is far more usual for these preparatory schools to be run by private enterprise as boarding establishments, and to be situated in healthy localities by the sea or in the country. They take boys at the age of eight or nine and prepare them either for the 'Common Entrance Examination,' established in 1903, which admits candidates to public schools, or for scholarships at schools of this kind. The amenities which preparatory schools provide are costly, and therefore high fees are charged and admission is virtually restricted to the sons of well-to-do parents. The Incorporated Association of Preparatory Schools, which dates from 1892, links their headmasters and is represented

<sup>1</sup> St. Paul's and Merchant Taylors' are conspicuous exceptions.

on the Teachers' Registration Council. The curriculum and general outlook of these schools are oriented towards the public schools for which their pupils are prepared. For example, a good deal of stress is laid on the teaching of Latin. Owing to these facts, and as the normal age of entry to a public school is thirteen, it was difficult to make the public school accessible to any boys who had not been educated along preparatory-school lines. This resulted in a closed private system, running parallel with the national system but having few points of contact with it.

But, although the public schools have perhaps tended to take too much for granted their superiority over the State secondary school, there has been a gradual breaking-down of their exclusiveness; and this has grown as the century progressed. The public schools share the first and second school examinations with all other types of 'grammar' school. They no longer secure the great majority of open scholarships at Oxford and Cambridge. Most of them have accepted inspection and have been recognised by the Board of Education. Some of their most distinguished headmasters—e.g. Sir Cyril Norwood, who was headmaster of Harrow, and Canon Spencer Leeson of Winchester—have interested themselves in national education and have taken part fully in educational activities along with representatives of other types of education. At the same time State schools have learnt much of value from the public schools. Institutions such as organised games, prefects, and the house system have—with suitable modifications—been adopted not only by State secondary schools, but also by elementary schools. The public schools, being for the most part largely dependent on their fees, have encountered difficulties in the hard times which the twentieth century has brought; but the demand for public-school education has not diminished in spite of the development of the national system. New public

schools were opened in 1923 at Stowe and Canford. Moreover, similar schools have been founded for girls. Roedean, for example, dates from 1885 and Wycombe Abbey from 1896, and there are numerous other schools of this type; but the preparatory-school system has not been to any great extent imitated for girls, nor have their public schools a common entrance examination.

The public schools have been criticised ever since the days of Sydney Smith, and even before that. The narrowness of their curriculum and the harshness of their discipline and conditions of life were for long the chief charges levelled against them. These shortcomings were largely overcome during the nineteenth century; but with the great development of secondary education inside the State system, and with the spread of democratic ideas, the ground of criticism tended to change. It was urged that the public schools, with their high fees and their closed system, catered for a privileged class. It was only the wealthy—or, at any rate, the well-to-do—who could afford to send their sons to such schools. It was also argued that too much stress was laid on the desirability of public-school antecedents in appointing candidates to the highest posts in the State. Mr. Stanley Baldwin, when Prime Minister, in a speech-day address at Harrow, said: "When the call came for me to form a Government, one of my first thoughts was that it should be a Government of which Harrow should not be ashamed. I remembered how in previous Governments there had been four, or perhaps five, Harrovians, and I determined to have six." Remarks like this, even if made only half in earnest, occasioned much comment; and the assertion, not infrequently made, that the public schools afforded the best training for future 'leaders' was indignantly rebutted in some quarters. In short, it was argued that such schools were unfairly privileged, that they em-

phasised class distinctions, and that they were incompatible with a truly democratic régime. But this is not merely the view of critics or opponents of the public-school system; it is a view which from time to time has also been expressed by headmasters of public schools. In 1919 the Headmasters' Conference, under the chairmanship of Sir Frank Fletcher, headmaster of the Charterhouse, told the President of the Board of Education that they were "prepared to offer as a voluntary service, or rather to claim as a privilege, that share in the education of ex-elementary schoolboys which was demanded by the State from other schools."<sup>1</sup> The offer was gratefully acknowledged, but no machinery was proposed to make it effective. But the matter was not allowed to rest there, and there were not wanting those who believed that the public-school type of education had something of value to offer, and that the real solution of the problems involved was to see that this kind of education should be made available to boys of any class, if they could profit by it.

At last, in 1942, the President of the Board of Education, Mr. R. A. Butler, appointed a committee, under the chairmanship of Lord Fleming. Its duty was "to consider means whereby the association between the Public Schools . . . and the general educational system of the country could be developed and extended."<sup>2</sup> The Fleming Committee recommended that the opportunities of education in public schools "should be made available to boys and girls capable of profiting thereby, irrespective of the income of their parents."<sup>3</sup> It suggested that two lists of schools should be drawn up working under conditions which were referred to as Scheme A and Scheme B. Schools admitted to the Scheme A list would be mainly those which

<sup>1</sup> Fletcher, *After Many Days*, p. 272.

<sup>2</sup> *Report on The Public Schools and the General Educational System*, p. 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 100.

are known as 'direct-grant schools.' In 1926 all grant-aided schools not under L.E.A.s were given the choice of receiving a capitation grant direct from the central authority instead of aid from the L.E.A. The majority opted for the L.E.A. grant, but 250 schools preferred the direct grant. The Fleming Committee proposed that under Scheme A these schools should be accepted by the Board of Education as 'associated schools.' They would be "required either to abolish tuition fees<sup>1</sup> or, if tuition fees are retained, to grade them according to an approved income scale which should provide for total remission if a parent's income requires it"; it was also recommended "that boarding charges should be similarly graded in all schools participating in the Scheme."<sup>2</sup> The local education authority (or authorities) should have the right to reserve places at such schools and would pay tuition fees for their pupils, and part or all of the boarding fee also according to the parents' means. Direct grant would continue to be paid in respect of the other pupils, and at least one-third of the governing body would be nominated by the L.E.A.s sending pupils to the school. Scheme B would apply only to "such Boarding Schools or schools taking a substantial number of boarders as the Board may accept, being schools recognised by the Board as efficient and not being conducted for private profit."<sup>3</sup> This class would cover public schools of the normal type and they also would become 'associated'—i.e. with the general educational system of the country. They would offer a minimum of 25 per cent. of their annual admissions to pupils who had been previously educated for at least two years at a grant-aided primary school. To these children the

<sup>1</sup> In an interim report on the *Abolition of Tuition Fees in Grant-aided Schools* (1943), a majority of eleven members of the Fleming Committee advocated the abolition of fees in direct-grant schools; a minority of seven, including the chairman, was not in favour of this.

<sup>2</sup> *Report*, p. 64.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 101.

Board would grant bursaries to cover the total cost of boarding, tuition, and other necessary expenses, subject to a contribution from parents who could afford it. The bursars would be selected by a Regional Board, and parents would be free to apply for a child's admission to any school accepted under the scheme. If the governors of a Scheme A school made an agreement with an L.E.A. to reserve a certain number of places for its candidates, the L.E.A. was to be represented on the governing body.

The Fleming Committee's report, like so many other educational manifestos, was obviously a compromise. For that reason it was much criticised. It did little to satisfy those who believe that the public schools emphasise our existing social divisions and that they cater for a privileged class. Even if 25 per cent. of their pupils were admitted from primary schools on a bursary system, the remaining three-quarters of their places would still be reserved for the children of parents who could afford to pay high fees. It has also been suggested that so small a proportion of elementary-school bursars might find it difficult to become an integral part of such schools; and the assumption by the advocates of the public schools that there is something of outstanding value in their educational system, which would warrant the enormous expenditure of public money involved in sending a few highly selected bursars to them, is not everywhere regarded as axiomatic. But there already exist boarding schools which successfully bring together boys from different backgrounds under public-school conditions. At Rendcomb<sup>1</sup> in Gloucestershire, for example, about half of the pupils enter from preparatory schools and elsewhere on a fee-paying basis, while the rest are 'free placers' admitted on the results of the county special-place

<sup>1</sup> See J. H. Simpson, *Sane Schooling*, chap. i. (The school is called 'Churnside' in this book.)



examination. Christ's Hospital affords a still more illustrious example. Here is a public school of unquestioned standing, an ancient endowed foundation, a boarding school with all the traditions of the 'old school tie' in the best sense, but reserved for those who are ostensibly best qualified to benefit by it, and admitting a large proportion of ex-public elementary-school scholars.

Perhaps if our public schools could be turned into institutions of this type we might secure the most suitable education for some of our best material, and there would no longer be any danger of the public school remaining a preserve for the wealthy or the snob. But there are still other considerations involved. There is a strong, and not unnatural, feeling in some of the State secondary schools that a 'creaming-off' of bursars to be sent to the public schools would react disadvantageously to them, and would in the long run fail of its purpose. This view has been clearly put by Mr. Claydon, the headmaster of Maidstone Grammar School. "It is," he says, "from the unhindered development of the Secondary day schools, opening the gates of opportunity to so many children and gaining each year the esteem and confidence of more and more parents, and from far freer access from them to universities and professions, that the resolution of our social divisions may be most hopefully expected, and not from the artificial association with them, on unequal terms, of schools whose evolution has been based on utterly different principles."<sup>1</sup> Thus the whole situation bristles with difficulties. It is highly improbable that the British people would seek to cut the knot by attempting to abolish the public schools, or by turning Eton into a county college and Harrow into an emergency training college for teachers. We are not

<sup>1</sup> Article in *Journal of Education*, September 1944; quoted by Lester Smith, *To Whom do Schools Belong?* (Second Edition), p. 231.

likely to see another dissolution of the monasteries. No one can say that the Fleming Committee has solved the problem of the relation of the public schools to the State system of education; but it has perhaps suggested a way in which their association may begin, and subsequent developments, along those lines may eventually, as we grow accustomed to it, provide a solution.

The private schools, like the public schools, stand outside the national system. The latter have, for the most part, continued to flourish parallel with the development of State schools, but the private schools—as distinguished from the preparatory schools—have tended to decrease.<sup>1</sup> They vary enormously in efficiency. They are run for profit and are the property of individuals or groups of individuals. Unlike the preparatory schools, they are local schools, running parallel with the primary and secondary system and not normally catering for entrance to the public schools. They have laboured under increasing disadvantages. They receive no grants; teaching service in them is not pensionable; their buildings are too often improvised and their equipment poor. Yet some parents prefer them to the State schools because they are free from official interference and are more 'select.' The Board of Education Act of 1899 had given the Board power to inspect private schools if they asked for this. In 1930 a Departmental Committee of the Board was set up to investigate the private-school problem, and it reported in 1932. It recommended that the L.E.A. should inspect all private schools in its area, but mainly in order to see that the conditions were hygienic. Powers were to be given to the authority to close a school after warning if it remained unsatisfactory in this respect; but nothing was said about standards of work or the qualifications of teachers.

See Lowndes, *The Silent Social Revolution*, p. 165, and graphs on pp. 21 and 240.

Some of the most efficient private schools are the kindergartens which, though private, are often conducted by women with Froebel qualifications. Mention must also be made of private schools under the ægis of the Parents' National Educational Union. This body was founded in 1888 by Miss Charlotte Mason, whose educational teachings are worthy of greater attention than they sometimes receive. She criticised the tendency to 'play down' to children, and emphasised their claim to be regarded as 'persons' and to be treated accordingly. She provided a curriculum based on the best literature and on contact with whatever was good and beautiful and interesting in the child's environment. The whole scheme was permeated with a deep religious spirit. Miss Mason laid stress on a teaching method, which she called 'narration' and which consists essentially in making the child reproduce in his own words the substance of what he has read or heard. In order to provide teachers and governesses to carry out her ideas she founded in 1892 a 'House of Education' at Ambleside. She also provided courses of instruction by correspondence for mothers who wished to educate their children at home.

Something more than a mere passing reference is also due to the schools run by Roman Catholic Orders, the importance of whose work in this country is also not always recognised as it should be by educational historians. Many of their schools are inside the State system and receive State aid; some of the Roman Catholic voluntary schools, for example, are staffed by 'religious.' But there are many convent schools for girls, in particular, conducted on the best secondary boarding or day-school lines, but independent of Government or L.E.A. assistance. The Jesuits and Benedictines also do much educational work and, *inter alia*, run public schools, such as Stonyhurst and Beaumont, Downside, Ampleforth, and Douai. Worthy of note, too,

are the Christian Brothers, whose Institute was founded in France by St. Jean-Baptiste de La Salle in 1684, and who have been at work in this country since 1855. They are responsible not only for elementary and secondary schools, some of which are aided by public funds, but also for seven 'approved schools.'<sup>1</sup> Although, as can be well understood, the schools maintained by Roman Catholic Orders or congregations have a very definite religious character of their own, they include a fair percentage of non-Catholics among their pupils.<sup>2</sup>

Midway between the private schools, which are run for profit, and the public schools stands a group of schools which like to call themselves 'progressive.' They are of many types and for that reason are a little difficult to classify. They include schools so widely different as Dartington Hall, Frensham Heights, A. S. Neill's 'Dreadful School' in Suffolk, and King Alfred's School, Hampstead. An idea of their scope and aims can be obtained by consulting the *Modern Schools' Handbook*. Many of these schools are run by societies or groups of educational enthusiasts. They experiment with 'free discipline' or 'self-government,' or unconventional curricula; and they often provide a useful challenge to the traditional or stereotyped methods which are so difficult to avoid in a school with large classes and prescribed syllabuses. They are not usually conducted for private profit, even though they are 'private,' or independent, schools; but because they are often boarding schools and are expensive to run, and at the same time are ineligible for any kind of grant from public money, they tend to charge high fees. Thus they, again, are accessible only to a certain class of the community—a class which hesitates, for various reasons, to send its children to the

<sup>1</sup> See *infra*, p. 333.

<sup>2</sup> Reference should be made to Evennett, *The Catholic Schools*.

ordinary State schools. A few of these 'progressive' schools have been recognised by the Board of Education, and many of them are willing to prepare pupils for public examinations. But their chief aim is to be free and unconventional and experimental; and they can be so largely because they are entirely independent of any control by a local or central authority. Thus they have made, and are still making, a contribution to educational theory and practice which is sometimes beyond the scope of the ordinary State-supervised school.

## Chapter XXVIII

### UNIVERSITIES AND THE TRAINING OF TEACHERS

Development of University Education. The Reorganised University of London. Universities and Training Colleges; the *McNair Report*. Teachers' Salaries.

IN 1902 England possessed six universities. In addition to Oxford and Cambridge, there were Durham and London, the federal Victoria University, and a separate university at Birmingham. The early years of the century saw a remarkable development of independent universities. Victoria ceased to be a federation; Manchester and Liverpool obtained separate charters in 1903, and Leeds in 1904. University College, Sheffield, attained university rank in 1905 and University College, Bristol, in 1909. Reading received its charter in 1926. The University Colleges of Nottingham, Southampton, Exeter, Hull, and Leicester have not yet attained university status; but in the case of some of them, at any rate, this is probably only a matter of time. They do work of a university type and prepare their students for the external degrees of London University.

The English universities have succeeded in remaining independent of State control. The Government does not dictate to a university what it should teach, nor does it control the syllabuses or organisation or examinations. It has no voice in the appointment of professors and it does not inspect university work. In spite of this, it gives the universities considerable financial help. The first annual Treasury grant to universities was made in 1889, and it amounted to £15,000; by 1935 it had risen to roughly two millions. In 1911 a University Grants Committee was set up, consisting not of officials, but of prominent men familiar with the work and needs of universities. To this body—and

not to the Board of Education—was given the duty of allocating and distributing the Treasury grant for universities. Since 1922 Oxford and Cambridge, as well as the other British universities, have participated in this grant. But State aid is also given to universities for special services, and in particular for the training of teachers. Students recognised as 'teachers in training' receive tuition fees and a maintenance grant from the Ministry of Education, and a capitation fee is also paid to the university on their behalf. The modern university owes much to students of this type, for they tend to form a good proportion of the total membership, particularly in the faculty of Arts. L.E.A.s also often help universities by making grants or by giving scholarships to students coming up from their own schools. They are usually represented on the university governing body, but apart from this they have no control over university policy or organisation. All British universities still depend on fees and endowments to supplement the aid which they receive from public money.

With the increase in the number of universities in England and Wales and their individual development the number of full-time students has increased. It rose from 12,778 in 1908-9 to 40,465 in 1935-6. The foundation of new secondary schools after the 1902 Act and the introduction of the 'free-place' system helped an ever-growing number of ex-elementary-school pupils to get through to the university. The institution of State scholarships in 1920, open equally to boys and girls from State-aided secondary grammar schools, also strengthened the connection between these schools and the universities. The opening of universities to women on the same terms as to men has again tended to increase student numbers; and the institution of grant-earning places for intending teachers has also contributed to this. Thus there has been of late years a con-

siderable growth of university activity, and in it the 'modern' universities have played an increasingly important part. Yet Oxford and Cambridge still retain their old prestige and something of their old pre-eminence. But, while keeping what is best in their traditions, they have moved with the times. Compulsory Greek was abolished after the first Great War. New honours schools and triposes have been instituted—e.g. 'Modern Greats' (philosophy, politics, and economics) at Oxford, and mechanical sciences at Cambridge. The Cavendish laboratories at the latter University are among the best in the country; the facilities for medical research at Oxford are unrivalled. All the English universities and university colleges—old and new alike—have owed much to the private benefactor—such as those whose names are commemorated in the titles of the original colleges from which some of the universities have grown, and more recently men like Nuffield, Wills, Trent, Palmer, and Ferens.

The University of London is *sui generis* among English universities. As has been pointed out,<sup>1</sup> from 1858 onwards it became purely an examining body. The high standard of its degrees—and especially the pass degrees—and the variety of the courses available gave it considerable prestige. The reconstitution of the University at the end of the nineteenth century as a teaching, as well as an examining, body was an important stage in its development, but it resulted in a complicated organisation of heterogeneous institutions, and this involved many difficulties of administration. The problem was worked out in successive stages between the setting-up of a Royal Commission in 1909, under the chairmanship of Lord Haldane, and the passing of a University of London Act in 1926. The present constitution includes a Court, which controls finance, and

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, p. 103.



a Senate which is responsible for academic matters and is assisted by five standing committees dealing with the various departments of university business. Another important development has been the formation of a University Quarter, by bringing the constituent colleges and university departments as far as possible together in one district, and grouping them round the central buildings of the University. This scheme was set in motion in 1920, when a considerable area in Bloomsbury was acquired by the University, and a large administrative building was erected close to the British Museum and not far from University College. All these things have helped to give the University of London some sort of unity, and a soul of its own; but it can hardly be said that its constitutional problems have been fully solved.<sup>1</sup> It has a special significance among our universities in that, more perhaps than any other, it attracts students from all parts of the world. This helps to make it *par excellence* the imperial, or even the international, university; and that, after all, is one of the most characteristic traits of the university from its earliest origins in the Middle Ages.

The training of teachers has during the twentieth century become increasingly the concern of universities. The institution of 'day training colleges' in 1890 had given prospective elementary-school teachers a chance to read for degrees; though many of those who graduated by this means found their way, as we have seen, into the post-1902 secondary schools. At first the course was a 'concurrent' one and included both preparation for the degree and training in teaching. It was a system which bore heavily on the student and tended sometimes to encourage neglect of the professional part of the course. In 1911, therefore, a four-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Flexner, *Universities*, pp. 231-2: "I confess myself unable to understand in what sense the University of London is a university at all. It is a line drawn about an enormous number of different institutions of heterogeneous quality and purpose."

year course was introduced, which left the intending teacher free to study for a degree during the first three years, unhampered by professional work, and to devote the fourth year entirely to 'training.' This scheme was not adopted at once by all universities, but it is now the universal practice. Side by side with this development, the two-year (or three-year) course has been maintained in the training colleges. The Act of 1902 gave L.E.A.s the power to train teachers; but they were unable to do much at first because all their efforts and available finance had to be devoted to the provision of elementary and secondary education. Training colleges also are not *local* institutions to the same extent as schools; and not unnaturally L.E.A.s were sometimes loath to spend their resources for the benefit of students from outside. Most of the existing training colleges were denominational; and in 1906, therefore, the Government offered to pay three-quarters of the cost of new undenominational training colleges to be provided by L.E.A.s. Some of the more progressive of them responded; no less than twenty-two L.E.A. training colleges—most of them new foundations—came into being, all of them non-denominational and imposing no religious tests upon entrants. They included such well-known training colleges as that erected at Bingley by the West Riding County Council, and the Leeds City Training College.

The teacher's normal qualification, recognised by the Board of Education, was the 'certificate.' Up to 1926 it was awarded at the end of the training course on the result of an examination conducted by the Board of Education. The Board never made any sharp distinction between elementary and secondary training. As has been said, teachers trained in 'day training colleges' often went into secondary schools; and, conversely, a fair proportion of four-year-course candidates from university training departments

had always taken posts in elementary schools. This situation was made clearer in 1926 when the Board gave its certificate to recognised candidates who had qualified for university diplomas in education. But in future the certificate examination for training-college students was to be conducted, not by the Board itself, but by Regional Boards, on which representatives of the universities, the training colleges, and the L.E.A.s were represented, while H.M. inspectors had the right to attend meetings in an advisory capacity. With each university, or with an association of universities, a group of training colleges was associated. The primary duty of these 'Joint Examining Boards,' as they were called,<sup>1</sup> was to draw up courses of work for the training-college students and to conduct the examinations on which the certificate was awarded; but it was hoped that this purely examinational relationship between the university and its associated training colleges might develop into "some real measure of personal contact between training colleges and the university." In the event some Joint Boards went much farther in this direction than others. The fact that many of the training colleges are situated at a considerable distance from the nearest university has militated against close co-operation, though even under these conditions the handicap has to some extent been overcome. But in some places the training colleges have been near enough to be affiliated and for their students reading for degree courses to become ordinary undergraduates of the university. This has occurred, for example, at Durham. Bede College, St. Hild's, and Neville's Cross are at once training colleges and halls of residence in the University of Durham. Somewhat similarly Goldsmiths' College has been incorporated in the University of London.

Any expansion or improvement of the national system of

<sup>1</sup> See Board of Education Circular 1372 (December 11th, 1925).

education is most closely bound up with the recruitment and training of teachers. The complications introduced by the second World War and the renewal of plans to raise the school-leaving age and provide extended educational facilities for 'young persons'<sup>1</sup> made the problem of the supply of well-qualified teachers more urgent than ever. For this reason, in March 1942, Mr. R. A. Butler, the President of the Board of Education, appointed a committee which is usually known by the name of its chairman, Sir Arnold McNair. Its terms of reference were "to investigate the present sources of supply and the methods of recruitment and training of teachers and youth leaders, and to report what principles should guide the Board in these matters in the future."<sup>2</sup> Its report was presented in 1944. The Committee, faced with the problem that some 70,000 additional teachers would be needed after the war, realised that conditions in the profession would have to be made more attractive and that the field from which teachers were drawn would have to be extended. "Education," said Mr. Butler in the House of Commons,<sup>3</sup> "is more than mere acquisition of knowledge, and it is my belief that after the war we could find young men and women with a wide experience of life, not necessarily academically inclined, who, if suitably trained, would welcome this form of service to the community and would add variety and richness to the teaching personnel." The McNair Committee therefore recommended that every encouragement and help should be given to pupils in all forms of post-primary school, and not merely in the academic grammar school, if they were willing "to consider preparation for the teaching profession and are

<sup>1</sup> This is the term normally used in Acts of Parliament to denote boys and girls who have left school, but are still under the age of eighteen. In the Children and Young Persons Act of 1933 the upper age limit is seventeen.

<sup>2</sup> *Report on Teachers and Youth Leaders*, p. 5.

<sup>3</sup> June 16th, 1942. *Parliamentary Debates*, Fifth Series, vol. 380, p. 1412.

provisionally judged suitable for it.”<sup>1</sup> Facilities should also be offered to candidates of maturer years to become teachers. Conditions of service should be improved and salaries “substantially increased.” The promise to enter teaching, which had hitherto been exacted of those admitted to grant-earning courses in universities or training colleges, should be abandoned, and the existing two-year course in training colleges should be extended to three. The four-year university course was left intact, though many people would have liked to see a more extended postgraduate diploma course. Recommendations were made for improving the status and quality of training college staffs and for “the secondment of teachers from schools for a period of service in training institutions.”<sup>2</sup> The *Report* went on to deal with the training of ‘youth leaders’ and of teachers in technical colleges and schools; further reference will be made to these points.<sup>3</sup>

The McNair Committee agreed that there should be a Central Training Council for England and Wales, and that it should have the duty of “advising the Board of Education about bringing into being that form of area training service recommended in this Report which the Board may decide to adopt.”<sup>4</sup> Unfortunately the members were equally divided as to what form the area training service should take, and they therefore submitted alternative schemes. The first proposed to set up University Schools of Education. It would lay on each university the responsibility for co-ordinating and organising the training of teachers of all kinds in its own area; and that, not only in the university itself, but also in training colleges and in any other kind of institution (e.g. technical or agricultural colleges, schools of

<sup>1</sup> *Report on Teachers and Youth Leaders*, p. 141.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 146.

<sup>3</sup> See *infra*, pp. 319–320 and 339.

<sup>4</sup> *Report on Teachers and Youth Leaders*, p. 143.

art, music, or domestic science) which could contribute in any way towards the training of these teachers. The University School of Education would be administered by a delegacy on which not only the university but the L.E.A.s and the training institutions would be represented; and it would be housed in a building which could be used to focus the general educational activities of the area, so far as both teachers and students in training of all kinds were concerned. The other scheme preferred to develop the existing Joint Board machinery. The University Department of Education and the training colleges would preserve their separate identity, but the Joint Board would link together both them and the other training facilities of the area, and would carry out the various educational activities involved.

These schemes provoked much discussion when the *Report* was issued. The majority of opinion outside the universities favoured the first scheme; but it was obvious that conditions in the different universities varied so much that a cast-iron system for all training areas in the country might be inadvisable. The universities also, not unnaturally, felt some misgivings about the 'major constitutional change' (as the authors of the first scheme described it) which they would undergo if this plan were adopted. In fact, the *Report* brought to a head a controversy on the value and function of the university, which had been developing with the growth of the newer universities. The American scholar, Flexner, writing in 1930, defines a university as "essentially a seat of learning, devoted to the conservation of knowledge, the increase of systematic knowledge and the training of students well above the secondary level"; and he says of our British university students in the arts and science faculties: "An excessive proportion become teachers. To be sure, teachers need to be educated. But a point is soon reached, where a university is saturated with

prospective teachers; beyond that point, leisure and inclination for research suffer, and the university tends to deteriorate into a teacher-training establishment, though, of course, the right man will win through."<sup>1</sup> Thus the problem, not yet solved, is to bring the training of teachers of all kinds as fully as possible within the ambit of the university, without destroying the essential character of the university itself.

The recruitment of teachers must always be in some measure dependent on the remuneration which they are to receive. Teaching has never offered more than a competence, and it affords far fewer highly paid posts than any other of the professions. Previous to 1921 there were no standard scales of pay; each school or L.E.A. made its own arrangements, and those which were most wealthy naturally attracted the best-qualified teachers. After the 1902 Act there had been some improvements; but even in 1909 some of the L.E.A.s and governing bodies paid their graduate assistant masters in secondary schools as little as £120, and the maximum rarely exceeded £200 a year.<sup>2</sup> The teachers in some of the elementary schools received a mere pittance. As late as 1914 the average salary for a certificated assistant teacher was £129 (man) and £96 (woman); for the uncertificated the figures were £76 and £69. In 1917 Mr. Fisher obtained an increased Exchequer contribution towards the cost of teachers' salaries. Two years later he set up a committee, including representatives of the L.E.A.s and the teachers, under the chairmanship of Lord Burnham. To them was entrusted the task of working out scales for elementary-school teachers on a national basis. Other committees did a similar service for secondary and technical teachers; and by 1921 a whole series of scales, accepted by

<sup>1</sup> Flexner, *Universities*, p. 255.

<sup>2</sup> See Norwood and Hope, *Higher Education of Boys in England*, Appendix B.

all parties, was in operation. Subsequently there were some readjustments, and during the financial crisis following the year 1931 there was a considerable temporary 'cut'; but the principle of a national scale was never called in question. The great rise in the cost of living, due to the second World War, and the importance of attracting large numbers of additional teachers into the profession, brought the question of salaries again to the fore. As has been pointed out, the McNair Committee recommended substantial increases in the payment of teachers, and said that their salaries and prospects should be equated with those of the administrative and executive branches of the Civil Service. Accordingly the 'Burnham' Committee—now under the chairmanship of Lord Soulbury—completely recast its scales. Different rates of pay for teachers in 'elementary' and 'secondary' grades were abolished; but a single basic salary for all 'qualified' teachers was introduced, with extra allowances for special qualifications or duties. The initial salaries were considerably increased; but the scheme has been severely criticised on the ground that it gives inadequate reward to senior and highly qualified members of the profession, and, in particular, to the heads of 'grammar' schools.

The institution of national salary scales has implied the introduction also of a superannuation scheme for teachers. Even in the days of Kay-Shuttleworth, small retiring pensions had been available for teachers in grant-earning elementary schools. From time to time these allowances were withdrawn, and, of course, they were never available for secondary-school teachers who were outside the State system. In 1898 a deferred annuity scheme was introduced; and after the Act of 1902 some municipal authorities included teachers in the superannuation schemes for their officials. But the whole system was replaced by the Teachers' Superannuation Acts of 1918 and 1925, which secured for



all teachers, serving in State-aided schools of any kind, a pension based on length of service and the salary earned during the last five years of it, together with a lump sum calculated on a similar basis. At first the scheme was non-contributory—as with Civil Service and Army pensions; but after it had been working for a short time teachers were required to contribute 5 per cent. per annum of their salary towards superannuation. To this the State and the L.E.A. or school governors together added another 5 per cent.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For details see *Teachers (Superannuation) Act, 1925*, § 5, and Birchenough, *History of Elementary Education*, p. 478.

## Chapter XXIX

### THE PROGRESS OF SECONDARY EDUCATION

The Spens Report. The Multilateral School and the School Base. The Norwood Report.

THE Hadow Report on *The Education of the Adolescent* had pointed the way to a new conception of post-primary education, some form of which was to be available for every child. It left intact the 'grammar' school with its rather academic course; but it also provided the modern school and the senior classes which would give a general education with some bias towards local industries. It also left the junior technical school with its two- or three-year course from about the age of thirteen. In theory all types of post-primary education were to be of equal status, and the modern schools were not to be treated less generously than the grammar schools. It was more easy to make these recommendations than to carry them out. As has already been seen, the administrative difficulties were considerable; but more fundamental is the fact that a national educational system reflects—though it may also in time modify—the national social outlook. An official report or an Act of Parliament cannot at once alter deep-seated social habits. The 'modern' school has inevitably inherited much of the long tradition of the old 'elementary' school; while the 'grammar' school, with its better equipment and its power (up to 1944) to charge fees, has tended to take a higher place in the social scale. To accustom the public mind to an entirely new outlook on secondary education will inevitably be a lengthy, and perhaps not an easy, process. But the work which the Hadow Committee began in 1926 has been diligently followed up. In 1938 the Consultative Committee, now under the chairmanship of Sir Will Spens, issued a *Report on Secondary Education*. Its terms of reference were:

"To consider and report upon the organisation and inter-relation of schools, other than those administered under the Elementary Code, which provide education for pupils beyond the age of eleven plus; regard being had in particular to the framework and content of the education of pupils who do not remain at school beyond the age of about sixteen." Thus the *Report* was not directly concerned with 'modern' schools and it amplified the Hadow *Report* of 1926, which had given special attention to this subject.

The Spens *Report* points out that when, as a result of the 1902 Act, the State undertook for the first time the general reorganisation of secondary education, the ancient grammar school was adopted too exclusively as the model for the secondary school. The institution in 1917 of the first school examination (the school certificate), which was taken by the public and grammar schools, "had the effect of strengthening and intensifying this tendency towards uniformity."<sup>1</sup> But "schools of every type fulfil their proper purpose in so far as they foster the free growth of individuality, helping every boy and girl to achieve the highest degree of individual development of which he or she is capable in and through the life of a society."<sup>2</sup> Thus the secondary curriculum must cater for different interests and different needs; and it should be thought of in terms of activity and experience rather than of knowledge to be acquired and facts to be stored. The *Report* goes on to interpret this dictum in detail in terms of the grammar-school curriculum, and points out that hitherto it has been too much dominated by the requirements of the school certificate. It advocates greater freedom in the choice of subjects and a reduction in the content of examination syllabuses. But alongside of these grammar schools, which will continue to be the chief sources of candidates for the university and which will be distinguished by their Sixth

<sup>1</sup> Spens *Report*, p. 352.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 362.

Form work, the Spens Committee suggested a development of what might be called secondary technical education. It was proposed to retain the junior technical schools with their two- or three-year course and their entry age of thirteen plus; but the Committee also advocated "a new type of higher school of a technical character, wholly distinct from the traditional academic Grammar (Secondary) School."<sup>1</sup> Such schools would take in pupils at the age of eleven plus and would provide for them a five-year course; and to distinguish them from the junior technical schools, they would be called technical high schools. To meet the criticism that eleven plus is too early an age at which to decide whether a child is best fitted for a technical career and to start him on a career of a vocational nature, the Spens Committee recommended that "the curriculum for pupils between the ages of eleven plus and thirteen plus in Technical High Schools should be broadly of the same character as the curriculum in other types of secondary school of equal status. For pupils above the age of thirteen the curriculum should be designed so as to provide a liberal education with Science and its applications as the core and inspiration."<sup>2</sup> Whenever possible technical high schools should be housed in technical colleges or technical institutes, so that staff and equipment may to some extent be shared. A new form of leaving certificate for technical high schools should be instituted, and this "should be given equal standing with School Certificates as fulfilling the first condition for matriculation."<sup>3</sup> There should be full opportunity for transfer as between grammar school and technical high school at about the age of thirteen. The Committee also reiterated the views expressed in the *Hadow Report* as to equality of status. "For the complete realisation of our recommendations regarding curriculum

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 274.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 372.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 373.

and the interrelation of schools, parity of schools in the secondary stage of education is essential. This principle was implicit in our Report on *The Education of the Adolescent* (1926), and we desire expressly to assert our conviction of its importance. If schools providing secondary education of different types are to be made equally acceptable to parents, and opportunities for entering the type of school which can best develop their particular abilities are to be made equally available to children, the establishment of parity between all types of secondary school is a fundamental requirement."<sup>1</sup> Nothing could be more definite than this.

The difficulty of ensuring this 'equality of status' has led many to advocate what is generally known as the 'multilateral' school. "The special characteristics of this type of school"—to quote the *Spens Report*<sup>2</sup>—"are the provision of a good general education for two or three years for all pupils over eleven plus in a given area, and the organisation of four or five 'streams,' so that the pupils at the age of thirteen or fourteen years may follow courses that are suited to their individual needs and capacity. There would be a common core in these several courses, but they would differ in the time and emphasis given to certain groups of subjects." Thus, instead of having three or more kinds of secondary school, differentiated according to the 'type' of pupil for whom they catered, there would be only one kind—the multilateral school—but it would provide different 'sides' or courses for its older members. It would receive its pupils from the primary school at eleven plus, but for the first two years all would follow much the same course, and this would provide an exploratory or 'orientation' period to discover individual needs and proclivities. For pupils from about the age of thirteen onwards the multilateral school would provide academic, technical,

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 376.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. xix-xx.

'modern,' and perhaps other kinds of course, each of which would have its own syllabus and special subjects, though certain classes could still be taken in common, and the school would still live together and play together as one society. Thus any question of 'status' would be obviated. The labourer who had been a pupil on the 'modern' side, the motor mechanic from the technical side, and the doctor or lawyer from the academic side would all wear the same old school tie. The Spens Committee, while believing that the 'multilateral idea' should permeate our system of secondary education, thought that administrative problems would make it difficult in practice. It was felt, *inter alia*, that multilateral schools would necessarily be very large and that therefore it would be impossible for the head to keep adequately in touch with the work of each 'side' and with individual pupils. It was also suggested that the numbers in the Sixth Form on the academic side would form so small a proportion of the total of pupils that the influence which it should exercise on the life and tradition of the school would be unduly diluted. The case for multilateralism has been debated largely on *a priori* grounds, and issues other than the purely educational have entered in to complicate it; but it is obvious that there is much room for experiment along these lines.

Mr. J. Howard Whitehouse has put forward an interesting scheme which might possibly achieve some of the benefits of multilateralism, while avoiding its alleged defects. He advocates what he calls the 'School Base.' All the schools of every type, serving a given area, would be situated in close proximity to a large tract of open land, including if possible some woodland and water. In addition to the various schools there would be an art gallery, a concert room with a stage, craft rooms and gymnasia, a canteen and a chapel, medical inspection rooms with a full-time resident

doctor and nurses. There would be ample playing-fields, swimming-baths, gardens, and agricultural land. There might also be facilities for adolescent activities and adult education. Residential accommodation might even be provided. On this 'base' each separate school or institution would retain its own individuality, but there would be ample opportunity for the sharing of staff and equipment, and all schools alike would use the basic 'plant.' The transport needed to bring the pupils from the contributory areas would be provided by special buses or rail-cars. Here again we have a scheme which offers interesting possibilities and with which experiment might well be made.

The work of the Consultative Committee, under Sir Will Spens, was supplemented by a special committee set up by the President of the Board of Education in 1941. Its *Report*, which was issued in 1943, is usually named after its chairman, Sir Cyril Norwood. The Committee's duty was "to consider suggested changes in the Secondary School curriculum and the question of School Examinations in relation thereto"; but it interpreted its terms of reference in a wide sense, and the *Report* includes an outline sketch of "the main features of a new secondary education which will cover the whole child population of the country and carry them on to part-time education."<sup>1</sup> The *Report* begins by claiming that it is possible to divide children roughly into three types for the purpose of education. These "rough groupings, whatever may be their ground, have in fact established themselves in general educational experience, and the recognition of such groupings in educational practice has been justified both during the period of education and in the after-careers of the pupils."<sup>2</sup> According to the Norwood Committee there is first the pupil "who is interested in learning for its own sake, who can grasp an argument or

<sup>1</sup> Norwood *Report*, p. v.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 2.

follow a piece of connected reasoning, who is interested in causes." Secondly, there is the pupil "whose interests and abilities lie markedly in the field of applied science or applied art. . . . He often has an uncanny insight into the intricacies of mechanism, whereas the subtleties of language construction are too delicate for him."<sup>1</sup> And finally there is the type of pupil who "deals more easily with concrete things than with ideas. . . . His mind must turn its knowledge or its curiosity to immediate test; and his test is essentially practical. . . . Because he is interested only in the moment he may be incapable of a long series of connected steps; relevance to present concerns is the only way of awakening interest; abstractions mean little to him." The history of English education is full of examples of theoretical arguments advanced to justify an already existing state of affairs. The *a priori* classification outlined by the Norwood Committee fitted in excellently with the scheme of post-primary education laid down in the *Spens Report*; and that in turn had been modelled largely on a system which had grown up in this country and had been determined mainly by historical, political, and economic conditions. For the 'academic' child of the *Norwood Report* there would be the secondary grammar school; for the mechanically minded there would be the secondary technical school; while for the pupil with an 'essentially practical' bent there remained the secondary modern school. To all three kinds of school "should be accorded all the parity which amenities and conditions can bestow."<sup>2</sup> Transfer from one type of school to another should be rendered as easy as possible. Selection of pupils for the kind of secondary education appropriate to their 'type' should be made on the basis of the judgment of the teachers of the primary school, supplemented 'if desired' by intelligence, performance, or other tests. "Due con-

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 139.



sideration should be given to the choice of the parent and the pupil."<sup>1</sup> The Norwood Committee agreed with the Spens Committee in suggesting that all types of secondary school should have a roughly common curriculum during the eleven plus to thirteen plus stage; and it was suggested that a 'lower school,' under the supervision of a special master or mistress, should be organised to deal with this. By such means it would be more easy to effect transfers at the age of thirteen plus, in cases where they were indicated, to the appropriate schools.

The division of children into three types, with three corresponding kinds of secondary school to which they can be drafted at the age of eleven plus, or possibly thirteen plus, is implicit in the recommendations of the *Hadow Report*; and this scheme has been merely applied and elaborated by the Spens and Norwood Committees. But it is a classification which has not passed unchallenged. As has already been indicated, the three types of mind seem to have been postulated so as to fit in conveniently with three existing types of school. The opinion has even been expressed that a scheme of this kind, if put into practice as completely as the Spens and Norwood *Reports* suggest, might intensify, rather than modify, social differences between 'types' of children and the schools which they attend. More convincing, perhaps, is the argument on psychological grounds which has been voiced, among others, by Professor Cyril Burt. In an article in *The British Journal of Educational Psychology*,<sup>2</sup> he discusses the belief that individual differences among pupils are chiefly due, not so much to an innate all-round capacity entering into every form of mental work, but rather to qualitatively different aptitudes producing qualitatively different types; and he says roundly: "This view entirely reverses the facts as they are known to us. The one

<sup>1</sup> Norwood *Report*, p. 139.

<sup>2</sup> November 1943, p. 131.

thing which the analysis of mental measurements has demonstrated beyond all doubt is the supreme importance during childhood of the general factor of intelligence." This criticism, coming from an authority of such weight, has serious implications for the whole proposed set-up of post-primary education. We may wish, for reasons of administrative convenience, to have three main types of secondary school and to give them all equal status. But a classification on the basis of general intelligence and not of 'type' may in the end be the true solution. As Professor Burt says: "In the interest of the nation as well as the child, the paramount need is to discover which are the ablest pupils, no matter to what school or social class they may belong, and generally to grade each child according to the relative degree of his ability, and give him the best education which his ability permits. . . . The proposed allocation of all children to different types of school at the early age of eleven cannot provide a sound psychological solution."<sup>1</sup>

The greater part of the *Norwood Report* was concerned—as indeed its terms of reference implied—with the examinations which so largely determined the curriculum of the secondary grammar school. The 'local' examinations instituted by the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge date from the fifties of the nineteenth century, and these were taken by pupils from both endowed schools and private schools. In addition to the senior local, which was virtually a school-leaving examination, junior, or even preliminary, examinations were instituted to be taken by younger candidates. The Oxford and Cambridge Joint Board examinations date from 1874, and they were intended mainly for the public schools which sent a fair proportion of their pupils to these Universities. At first a higher certificate alone was instituted to be taken by candidates<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 140.

<sup>2</sup> Girls were admitted from 1879.

aged eighteen or over. In 1884 a lower certificate was introduced for pupils leaving at the age of about fifteen or sixteen, and in 1905 a school certificate for those aged about sixteen or seventeen. In addition, many secondary schools of all types entered their pupils for the London University matriculation, which was originally intended as a preliminary qualification for a degree course; but it became more and more used as a school-leaving examination and was demanded as a qualification by employers. As secondary education developed after 1902 it became increasingly evident that the requirements of this series of external examinations were having undesirable reactions on the work of many schools; they were, in fact, tending to foster over-pressure and cramming.

The Board of Education made some attempts to deal with this problem, and finally referred it to the Consultative Committee. In a *Report*, published in 1911, this Committee expressed the opinion that the presentation of young and immature pupils for external examinations is mischievous, and that it was desirable that the various examinations should be co-ordinated. As a result the university examining bodies—there were seven of them by this time—recast or modified their schemes and there emerged two standard examinations—the first school (or school certificate) examination, with a general curriculum, and designed for pupils aged about sixteen; and a second school (or higher certificate) examination, offering more specialised groups, for pupils about eighteen. In 1917 the Board of Education set up a Secondary School Examinations Council to co-ordinate the standard of these examinations. Meanwhile the institution of ‘advanced courses’ for the Sixth Forms of ‘secondary’ (i.e. grammar) schools, for which a special grant of £400 a year might be obtained from the Board, had stimulated higher work for pupils who stayed on at school beyond the age of

sixteen. In 1918 the Board issued a regulation that no external examination should be taken by pupils in grant-earning secondary schools below the standard of the school certificate, or first school, examination; and that those who stayed on to take an advanced course could enter for the second school examination normally two years later. This had the effect of forbidding schools of this type to enter pupils for the junior or preliminary examinations of the University Locals, or of the College of Preceptors. There were now eight university bodies running first and second school examinations which were approved by the Board and co-ordinated by the Secondary School Examinations Council. In 1920 a system of State scholarships was instituted in order to increase the opportunities for pupils in grant-aided secondary grammar schools to proceed to universities and institutions of higher education. Of these 178 went to candidates from England and 22 to those from Wales. The scholarships were awarded on the results of the second school examinations. Their value was determined by the candidate's other resources, but normally it covered tuition fees and a maintenance grant of £80 a year for the university course.

All these reforms brought some sort of order into the secondary-school examination system; but it was still criticised on various grounds. It was said that the syllabuses were not sufficiently flexible and that they still exerted too much influence on the curriculum and the teaching in the schools. Some of the universities also accepted the school certificate, under certain conditions, as qualifying for their matriculation; some were even willing to excuse the intermediate degree examination in the case of holders of such higher certificates as were of approximately equal standard. This had the effect of still further conditioning the work in school for these certificates by university requirements; and

the fact that employers too often demanded 'matriculation exemption' from applicants for posts, as if it were a far superior qualification to the holding of a school certificate, had undesirable repercussions on 'secondary'-school work. It was to cope with such a situation as this that the Norwood Committee made a large part of its recommendations. It suggested that "in the interest of the individual child and of the increased freedom and responsibility of the teaching profession,"<sup>1</sup> the school certificate examination should be made an internal one. It should be based on a syllabus drawn up by the school itself and the papers should be set and marked by the teachers concerned. This would be a drastic change; but to ease the shock the Committee suggested that for a transitional period of seven years the examination should be carried on by the existing university bodies, with a strong representation of teachers, and that pupils should be allowed to offer "whatever subjects they wish to take." A certificate would be awarded to every candidate showing his performance in the examination, and to this the school authorities would add a statement of his school record.

The Norwood Committee also envisaged a 'school-leaving examination,' to be taken normally at the age of eighteen plus and designed to "give evidence of proficiency to pursue University or professional studies," and also to show that pupils had "pursued a course of Sixth Form work with profit."<sup>2</sup> Its purpose would not be to provide evidence of a general or 'all-round' education, but the candidates would offer a limited number of subjects, as required for the particular purpose which they had in view. The existing higher certificate examination would be abolished.

There remained the question of State scholarships and other awards enabling candidates to take courses at some

<sup>1</sup> *Norwood Report*, p. 140.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 41.

institution of higher education. The *Report* recommended that the winning of a scholarship offered by a university should give the scholar a "claim upon public funds for assistance towards the cost of living at the University, subject to evidence that such assistance is necessary."<sup>1</sup> But in addition there should be an examination, conducted each year in March, for the award of State and L.E.A. scholarships. On the result of this two lists of candidates would be issued. "Part A would contain those of high intellectual distinction, that is to say, capable of obtaining a first class or a good second class; part B would contain those of good intellectual attainment whose claims might be considered if there were other outstanding merits disclosed by the school record, but undiscoverable by written examination."<sup>2</sup> The recommendations of the university examining bodies would then be sent to the L.E.A.s from whose schools the candidates had come and would be reviewed by special boards, appointed for the purpose, who would take into account the candidates' performance in the examination and their school records. On these boards, which should be small, the universities, the L.E.A.s, and the teachers should be represented. The final award of the scholarships would be made by the Board of Education, and the State also would bear the cost. The amount granted should be sufficient to cover the entire expense of the university course. In addition to these State scholarships it would be open to L.E.A.s to make additional awards of their own to suitable candidates; and in this case the State would pay half the cost. The Norwood Committee deprecated a practice which had been adopted by some L.E.A.s—that of granting loans to students of merit to enable them to go on to advanced education at a university or elsewhere. The

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 37.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 39.

obligation to repay such sums in the early stages of the recipient's salary-earning career often proved a very heavy burden; and the *Report* records the opinion that "encouragement should not be given to a young man or woman to borrow for any purpose."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>*Op. cit.*, p. 41.

## Chapter XXX

### TECHNICAL AND CONTINUATIVE EDUCATION

Junior Technical Schools. Technical Colleges. Adult Education. The Community Centre and the Village College.

THE twentieth century has seen a great development in vocational and continuative education. This type of education includes full-time day courses, as well as part-time courses given mainly in the evening. Day courses for children of school age are provided by the junior technical schools, to which reference has already been made. Their forerunners were the trade schools which in the fifties of last century were started in connection with some of the larger and more effective mechanics' institutes at Manchester, Liverpool, Bristol, and elsewhere. These schools were designed to prepare boys for apprenticeship in the building, engineering, and manufacturing trades, by supplementing the work of the elementary school with practical mathematics and physical science as applied to industry.<sup>1</sup> The junior technical school owes something also to the organised science schools which were founded in the eighteen-seventies, and perhaps to the example of the German *Realschule*. It was not until 1913 that junior technical schools were recognised by the Board of Education as a distinct type of institution. They were described in the Board's Regulation as "definitely not intended to provide courses furnishing a preparation for the professions, the universities, or higher full-time technical work, or again, for commercial life; they are intended to prepare their pupils either for artisan or other industrial employment or for domestic employment."<sup>2</sup>

The junior technical school gave a two- or three-year

<sup>1</sup> See article by E. Salter Davies in *The Schools of England*, p. 171.

<sup>2</sup> See Board of Education *Report* for 1912-13, p. 124.



course starting from the age of about thirteen or fourteen, and designed for children who normally came from the elementary school. In some of them fees were paid, but there was always a number of free places. These schools had a strong vocational bias, determined by local needs, and they usually prepared for a group of allied trades, such as engineering or building. But some junior technical schools, especially in London, were more definitely 'trade schools,' and provided a more narrowly vocational training; for example, they might be oriented towards printing, the boot and shoe industry, tailoring, dressmaking. But at the same time all types of junior technical school gave a strong backing of general education, and in some of them even a foreign language was taught. Junior commercial schools have been instituted to provide courses in shorthand, book-keeping, and allied subjects; but this kind of preparation, with a better general education behind it, was also given to senior pupils who wished for it in some 'secondary' schools of the normal type. For girls housewifery and pre-nursing courses have also been organised. Often a junior technical school contains two or three different departments of the kind described. Many of these schools have developed a strong corporate life. Some of them enter candidates for the examinations of the Royal Society of Arts, or similar tests. Their teachers had a Burnham scale of salaries which, when it was first introduced in 1921, differed little from that for teachers in 'secondary' schools. It was provided, however, that a certain proportion of the staff in each junior technical school should have had industrial or workshop experience. As no special courses of professional training had been provided for teachers in technical schools, the McNair Committee turned its attention to this subject. It expressed the belief that "the training of the technical teacher, or at any rate the major part of it, should be undertaken after, rather

than before, he has entered upon his work as a practising teacher";<sup>1</sup> and it suggested that "the area training authorities should report at frequent intervals to the Board of Education, so that systematic courses of training for technical teachers may be provided and recognised."<sup>2</sup> Much of the training would be provided in the technical colleges or schools themselves, and would be conducted by technical teachers; thus the technical institutions concerned would become part of the general training services of any given area. At the same time, some of the instruction given would be the same as that provided for other types of teacher and should be shared with them; and this would help to obviate the danger of segregating technical teachers in their training.

In most cases a junior technical school was included in a technical college for adolescents or adults; and junior art schools, run on junior technical school lines, are usually attached to a senior school of art. Junior technical schools, whatever form they have taken, have already proved of first-rate importance, and it seems obvious that this type of education needs to be increased. In 1937 there were in England and Wales 220 junior technical schools of various kinds and 41 junior art departments in schools of art; the total of their pupils was 28,879.<sup>3</sup> With this we may contrast the provision of 'secondary' schools recognised by the Board of Education in the same year. There were 1,794 of these schools and they contained 558,097 pupils.<sup>4</sup> The relation of the junior technical school to other forms of post-primary education has hitherto been rather ill-defined and unsatisfactory. So long as fees were payable in the 'grammar' schools and were higher than those in the junior technical schools, or if the latter did not

<sup>1</sup> *McNair Report*, p. 121.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 148.

<sup>3</sup> See *Spens Report*, Table 16, p. 105.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, Table 2, p. 91.

charge any fees at all, parents tended to assume that a 'grammar'-school education was something intrinsically superior to that given in a junior technical school. The entry to the junior technical school at the age of thirteen also involved an awkward double break in the pupil's career, once the Hadow reorganisation, with its transfer to post-primary education at eleven plus, had been put into practice. One solution—which was adumbrated in the *Spens Report*—was to put grammar school and technical school on the same footing by abolishing fees in both and by making eleven plus the age of entry for *all* types of post-primary education. Another more drastic, but perhaps more satisfactory, solution would be afforded by the multilateral school.

Continuative education, given in the evening after working hours, has been available in various forms for the past hundred years or more.<sup>1</sup> The mechanics' institutes, for example, carried on their activities in the evening, and so did the evening continuation schools, which provided an elementary education for adolescents whose opportunities for ordinary schooling had been limited. Since 1926 the various types of school which give further education under these conditions have been officially known as "evening institutes." They cater either for adolescent or for adult students. In the case of the former—the junior evening institute—the pupils are usually under the age of sixteen or seventeen. Originally it was possible for students to take uncoordinated subjects; but in 1907 the Board of Education suggested that a group system should be introduced by which each student followed a course composed of several allied subjects, including English. For adults the senior evening institute offers a wide variety of subjects, and there is no compulsion or persuasion to take grouped courses, except where examinations require this. Even-

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, pp. 211–212.

ing institute classes may often be held in the buildings of a day school or other educational institution. But there have also come into existence a number of colleges for further education, which have been specially built and equipped on a large scale; they often have enormous numbers of students and a staff adequate to meet all their requirements. They run full-time or part-time day courses for adolescents or adults, and may include—as has already been said—a junior technical school or a junior art school; but they also cater fully for evening students. They even prepare for external degrees at London University, or in some cases have been affiliated to provincial universities. They provide courses for professional diplomas of many kinds and for the 'national certificates' which were instituted by the Board of Education in co-operation with various professional institutions—e.g. those of mechanical, electrical, and gas engineering, chemistry, and naval architecture. Sometimes employers have been willing to release their workers during the daytime to take courses at technical colleges of this kind; so that these have acted in such cases as a type of day continuation school. A good deal of technical education is also provided by the industrial firms themselves. Many of the larger engineering firms, for example, provide a systematic course of instruction for their trade apprentices who are taken straight from school. Thus there is often much co-operation between the firms which provide the 'internal' instruction in the works and the L.E.A.s which are responsible for the 'external' courses in the local technical colleges.

The twentieth century has seen a great development in the institutions for advanced technical and scientific education which had been established in South Kensington. It will be remembered that these included the Royal College of Science and the Royal School of Mines, which traced

their origin back to the period of the Great Exhibition. There was also the Central Technical College, which had been founded by the City and Guilds of London Institute in 1884 and which had devoted itself more particularly to the teaching of engineering. In 1904 the Board of Education appointed a departmental committee, under the chairmanship of Lord Haldane, to explore the possibilities of co-ordinating the work of these three institutions. Its *Report*, published in 1906, recommended "the establishment at South Kensington of an institution or group of associated colleges of science and technology where the highest specialised instruction should be given and where the fullest equipment for the most advanced training and research should be provided in various branches of science, especially in its application to industry, for which no sufficient provision exists elsewhere." The result was the establishment by Royal Charter in 1907 of the Imperial College of Science and Technology, which became a school of the University of London. Meanwhile the Normal School of Design, which had been founded as far back as 1837, had become—after the establishment of the Department of Practical Art in 1852—a National Training School of Art; and this in 1896 was renamed The Royal College of Art. It, like the Imperial College of Science and Technology, is situated in South Kensington. Its special object is "the training of Art Teachers of both sexes, of designers, and of Art workmen."

Many types of technical institution also afford opportunities for non-vocational continuative education; but this comes more particularly within the sphere of what since 1924 has been officially known as Adult Education. Hitherto this had not been separated from technical education; but in that year conditions of grant for the general and non-vocational education of adults were issued separately in the

Regulations for Adult Education. The scope of these regulations was further enlarged in 1931. Adult education had been carried on by the universities ever since the 'extension' movement started in the seventies of the nineteenth century. It was in a way an outcome of the attempts which had been made to bring university education within the reach of women, and it owes much to the pioneer work of James Stuart of Cambridge.<sup>1</sup> But the movement has been supplemented by the foundation by Dr. Albert Mansbridge in 1903 of the Workers' Educational Association. Its aim was to bring together the co-operative societies, the trade unions, and the university extension authorities; and the scheme was first suggested in a series of articles which Mansbridge contributed to the *University Extension Journal*. But in the case of the W.E.A. the initiative has come rather from the side of the student than of the tutor. Its aim was to give working men and women opportunities of pursuing studies of a university type, under the direction of university teachers. Thus, in active co-operation with the universities, it has helped to develop adult education as an integral part of the national system, and to this end it receives assistance from the Ministry of Education. W.E.A. courses last in many cases for one year, though some may be continued as long as three years. The duration of a class is two hours, and a meeting is held normally once a week. The subjects of study cover a wide range, but economics, history, and literary topics are perhaps the most popular. The instruction includes lectures, discussions, and the preparation of essays. For students of the 'working class' who were able to take full-time courses lasting at least a year, Ruskin College was founded at Oxford in 1899. Its aim, in the words of one of its founders, was to "take men who have been merely condemning our institu-

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, pp. 212-213.

tions and to teach them, instead, to transform these institutions so that in place of talking against the world they will begin methodically and scientifically to possess the world." There was at first some confusion of aim and ideals, culminating in a split in 1909, when a separate Labour College was formed. Although this has since been closed, classes have been established in many industrial areas under the auspices of the 'Plebs League,' and a comprehensive organisation known as the National Council of Labour Colleges came into existence in 1921. This movement is less objective and more frankly sectional than that for which Ruskin College stands; it aims at providing instruction which will be of "practical usefulness to the workers in their class struggle."<sup>1</sup> Meanwhile Ruskin College continues the work for which it was first designed. It is a residential institution and since 1921 has been aided by the Board of Education. Although it does not, of course, form part of the University, some of its students read for university diplomas in such subjects as economics. Colleges of a somewhat similar type have been established at Harlech in Wales (Coleg Harlech), at Woodbrooke, Birmingham, and elsewhere.<sup>2</sup>

Sir Richard Livingstone has recently advocated the establishment of residential colleges for adult education, on the lines of the Danish People's High Schools. These would be run by L.E.A.s and would provide "for weekends, or for weeks, of study." Their courses would be cultural and not vocational. They would, in fact, help to pull together our whole system of adult education, "to bring some order into the spiritual chaos of today and to create a democracy which had 'meat and raiment,' but in

<sup>1</sup> See J. F. and W. Horrabin, *Working-Class Education*.

<sup>2</sup> See *Residential Colleges for Adult Education*, published by the Educational Settlements Association.

which the life was more than the meat and the body than the raiment.”<sup>1</sup>

Another interesting form of adult education is provided by the women's institutes which are found particularly in country villages. They date from 1915 and they did admirable work during the first World War. By the end of 1932 there were some 5,000 institutes, with a membership of approximately 297,000. Every county in England and Wales had its own federation, and these were united in a National Federation of Women's Institutes. They arrange classes in cultural and recreational subjects, as well as in domestic and other crafts; and they have usually a strong social side.

A more fully developed attempt to focus the social and educational activities of an area is afforded by the community centre. In June 1929 a conference was held to consider what could be done to promote the growth of a healthy social life in the new housing estates which were being developed by local authorities. It was attended by representatives of the National Council of Social Service, the British Association of Residential Settlements, and the Educational Settlements Association. As a result of the conference a New Estates Community Committee (afterwards known as the Community Centres and Associations Committee) was set up, with Sir Ernest Barker as chairman. Within the next nine years other associations came into existence, not only in the larger cities, but also in some of the smaller towns, such as Reading and Taunton. By the summer of 1939 there were seventy Community Associations in existence, affiliated to the National Council of Social Service, and about two hundred schemes for the provision of community centres were in hand. Aid was given by the Carnegie Trustees, and in some cases by L.E.As. But these associations have sprung up and have

<sup>1</sup> Livingstone, *The Future in Education*, p. 86.



been financed in many different ways. One of the largest and best equipped of them—that on the trading estate at Slough—was provided by the local employers whose work-people benefited by the centre. The object of a community association is the general well-being of the society which it serves. It aims at associating local authorities, voluntary organisations, and residents in a common effort to advance education, to promote health, and to foster a community spirit. To this end it establishes and maintains a community centre where its activities can be carried on. It includes such amenities as common rooms, a canteen, and a hall for lectures, meetings, dances, dramatic work, and the like. There should also be a gymnasium and craft rooms. At Slough there is a magnificent swimming-bath. It is possible that a branch library or a child welfare clinic will be accommodated in the centre; and it is sometimes advocated that a school should also be located on the site. Thus the centre aims at giving full expression to the social and cultural life of the community which it serves. It caters largely, but by no means exclusively, for the young men and women who live and work in its area; but it often includes also a junior membership for boys and girls between the ages of fourteen and eighteen. It is probable that the community centre will have points of contact with the day continuation school (or ‘county college,’ to give it the title conferred on it by the 1944 Education Act); but it has a rather wider outlook, although it is definitely associated with a specific community living together on a housing estate. It seems that one of the effects of the Education Act of 1944 will be to require L.E.A.s to play a greater part in relation to community centres than they have done hitherto.<sup>1</sup>

An important experiment in linking together the many-sided educational, cultural, and social activities of a definite

<sup>1</sup> See Education Act 1944, §§ 41, 42, 53.

region was provided by the Cambridgeshire village colleges. These owe their origin to the wisdom and vision of the County Education Secretary, Mr. Henry Morris. The first of these colleges was opened at Sawston in 1928, and others have since been erected in other parts of the county. Each serves a well-defined rural area. Its buildings house a 'modern' school, and the children are brought in by buses if they do not live in the village where the college happens to be. But in addition there is accommodation for adult education and all the amenities of a community centre. There are lecture rooms and common rooms for adults, a hall where concerts and dramatic performances and dances and cinematograph shows can be held, a branch of the county library, a workshop, a laboratory, a cookery room, a canteen, and adequate playing-fields. The parish council and the women's institute hold their meetings on the college premises. Thus the village college is at once a school, a club, and a cultural and recreational centre for old and young alike. If it is true, as a speaker at the British Association meeting in 1936 said,<sup>1</sup> "Education corporately administered is the principle of unity by which modern communities, whether urban or rural, can be significantly integrated at any stage of culture," then the village college provides an example of very far-reaching importance, and its implications are far from being confined to the purely rural area.

<sup>1</sup> See pp. 436-7 of B. A. *Report* for 1936.

## Chapter XXXI

### HELPING THE ADOLESCENT

Vocational Guidance. Juvenile Unemployment and Delinquency. Youth Service.

THE twentieth century has seen the development of many schemes to help the 'young person'—i.e. the boy or girl who has left school but has not yet attained the age of eighteen.<sup>1</sup> The chief problem facing the school-leaver is that of 'getting a job.' So long as this was left to chance, many square pegs got into round holes, and the State suffered thereby as well as the individuals concerned. To obviate this situation systems of 'vocational guidance' have been devised. This implies not only guiding the school-leaver into that particular occupation where he will find his greatest interest and realise his capacities to the utmost, but also giving him information about his duties and opportunities and the knowledge and training required in any particular sphere. In addition it necessitates acquainting him with the state of the labour market and his chances of obtaining the kind of post for which he seems best suited. A good deal has always been done by the heads of post-primary schools, and in some such schools 'careers masters' have been appointed. But it is difficult for members of a school staff to get the leisure and the opportunities to carry out this work adequately; and for that reason the help of the school must be supplemented by specially constituted outside agencies. In 1909 labour exchanges were instituted to deal with the problem of unemployment, and these included a special juvenile department. In 1910 came the Education (Choice of Employment) Act, which enabled L.E.A.s "to give boys and girls information, advice, and assistance with respect to the choice of employment." This was to be done by "the collection and communication of

<sup>1</sup>See *supra*, p. 298 n.

information and the furnishing of advice.”<sup>1</sup> To this end juvenile employment committees were set up. They included representatives of industry, persons interested in education, and social workers. Under the powers given by the 1910 and subsequent Acts juvenile employment bureaux have been opened by some L.E.A.s, and both they and the juvenile departments of labour exchanges have been much used. The total number of boys and girls placed in jobs by this means rose from 113,670 in 1922 to 445,424 in 1934.<sup>2</sup>

The bureaux and exchanges have done important work; but, in view of the large numbers of school-leavers with which they have to deal, they have had to work largely on empirical lines. A more ambitious and scientific method of vocational guidance is that given by the National Institute of Industrial Psychology, which was founded in 1921. A carefully thought-out series of psychological and other tests, lasting about three hours, is set to each candidate for guidance, and it is conducted by a team of experts. For this reason it is an expensive process, and it has therefore been used mainly for pupils leaving school at the age of sixteen to eighteen, whose parents can afford to pay the fees involved. It also takes account only of the suitability of the candidate, and is not concerned with the possibility of securing the kind of post to which he seems suited. At present, therefore, a system of this kind can be applied only to a limited extent; but it would be advantageous if some of the technique of the National Institute of Industrial Psychology could be combined with the activities of the juvenile employment bureau in giving vocational guidance. In this way the interests and capacities of the school-leaver might be so far as possible correlated with the occupational opportunities that happen to be available.

<sup>1</sup> Education (Choice of Employment) Act, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> Ministry of Labour *Report* for Year 1934, p. 45.

Reference may here be made to the attempts which were made after the first World War to deal with school-leavers who found difficulty in obtaining jobs. In November 1918 juvenile unemployment centres, conducted by L.E.A.s, were set up to provide educational and recreative activities for young people who could not get work. Further schemes were tried out from time to time, and in 1929 the title was changed to 'junior instruction centres.' The whole matter was tied up with the question of unemployment insurance. Under Section 15 of the Unemployment Insurance Act of 1930 "the Minister [of Labour], after consultation with the Board of Education, shall . . . make arrangements with local education authorities for the provision, as far as is practicable, of approved courses of instruction for insured contributors under the age of eighteen years who claim benefit." But the minimum age for entry into unemployment insurance was sixteen, so that there was a period between leaving school and the age of sixteen when the 'young person' was non-insurable. However, the Unemployment Act of 1934 carried the matter a stage farther. The Ministry of Labour, in an explanatory note on this Act, said: "The Unemployment Act provides for the establishment of courses of instruction for unemployed boys and girls between school-leaving age and eighteen years of age. For the first time a statutory obligation is imposed on education authorities to provide such courses as may be necessary. . . . For the first time also the Minister is empowered to require the attendance at an authorised course of instruction of any boy or girl between the school-leaving age and eighteen years of age who is capable of and available for work but has no work, or only part-time or intermittent work." Between 1918 and 1934 over a million young persons had passed through the junior instruction centres; and in December 1934 there were in Great Britain 111 centres

and 13 classes for unemployed juveniles, with a total attendance of 18,887. In his *Report on Junior Instruction Centres and their Future*<sup>1</sup> Mr. Valentine Bell says that their object was "to guide young persons in the ways of spending their leisure time in order that their personalities may be developed or saved from the destruction of individuality wrought by modern methods of mechanisation. . . . It is the use of leisure time that is of such importance to the youth of today, for in the future this may be increased owing to the shortening of routine working hours, and the increase of part-time work." But the junior instruction centre was a palliative, and not a solution, for the problem of juvenile unemployment. It was difficult to organise coherent courses in them, for the membership was always fluctuating; and there also was no real incentive for boys and girls to attend an educational institution, so long as the work was regarded as a kind of penalty for being unemployed. A more satisfactory method of tackling the problem would have been the raising of the school-leaving age and the institution of day continuative education for all young persons, whether they happened to be employed or not.

Juvenile unemployment is one problem and another is juvenile delinquency. How far law-breaking by children is criminal, and how far due to bad home conditions or merely a manifestation of a spirit of adventure or mischief, may perhaps be debated. But it is obvious that treatment should be preventive and educational rather than penal. The practice of sending children under fourteen to prison was not abolished until the passing of the Children Act in 1908. This also set up special juvenile courts for dealing with offenders aged from seven to sixteen. The Children and Young Persons Act of 1933 raised the ages to eight and seventeen. Young offenders, awaiting the hearing of their

<sup>1</sup> P. 77.

case, are detained if necessary in what is known as a 'remand home.' A system of probation, by which delinquents are put under some form of supervision, has come extensively into use. If a child's home is considered to be unsuitable, he may be committed for a term of years to a hostel or home or "to the care of a fit person, whether relative or not, who is willing to undertake the care of him." But if it is decided that he needs institutional treatment, he may be sent back to a remand home until he can be admitted to an 'approved school'—i.e. one which has been approved by the Home Office for the reception of delinquents.<sup>1</sup> Approved schools are, of course, residential, and they cater for three age-groups of delinquents—junior schools for those admitted under the age of thirteen; intermediate for entrants aged thirteen to fifteen, and senior for those aged fifteen to seventeen.<sup>2</sup> In the first group the curriculum is much the same as that of the ordinary elementary school; in the intermediate approved school the work is partly vocational; while for the seniors many kinds of industrial and technical courses are provided. Delinquents are committed for a period of three years, but this is usually reduced; for, when it is considered advisable to do so, they may be released on 'licence' and sent out into some form of employment. They are 'followed up' for another three years, either by the head of the school or someone acting for him, or under the supervision of a local welfare officer. How far this system is successful may be judged from the fact that about 20 per cent. of the boys, and rather less than this number of the girls, who have passed through an approved school have been found guilty of new offences within three years of leaving.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A beginning has been made with a scheme for assessing delinquents in 'classifying schools' before deciding which particular approved schools are likely to be most suitable for them. See *Making Citizens* (H.M.S.O., 1945).

<sup>2</sup> For girls there are normally only two types of approved school—junior, taking in delinquents under the age of fifteen, and senior for girls admitted between the ages of fifteen and seventeen.

<sup>3</sup> See Mayer, *Young People in Trouble*, p. 38.

For older and more serious offenders there are the Borstal institutions. In 1902 some convicted youths, aged sixteen to twenty-one, were sent to a disused prison at Borstal, near Rochester, to be trained on industrial lines apart from adult criminals. Their régime was designed to teach self-reliance and self-respect, and arrangements were made to find them work when they left the establishment. In 1944 there were seven Borstal institutions for boys and one for girls. By Section 1 of the Prevention of Crime Act of 1908 the court, before sending an offender between the ages of sixteen and twenty-one to such an institution, must be "satisfied that the character, state of health, and mental condition of the offender, and the other circumstances of the case, are such that the offender is likely to profit by such instruction and discipline;"<sup>1</sup> and that "by reason of his criminal habits, or tendencies, or association with persons of bad character, it is expedient that he should be subject to detention." The length of the detention is not less than two, and not more than three, years, and its object is "training rather than punishment."<sup>2</sup> The Borstal system has been criticised on various grounds, but it has proved to have beneficial results, especially where the maximum period of detention has been imposed.<sup>3</sup>

Juvenile unemployment and delinquency are urgent problems and have called for serious attention; but a more fundamental consideration is how best to meet the needs of young people of all types, whether they be in trouble or not. It is from a realisation of this situation that the movement known as 'youth service' has grown. For many years past much had been done by voluntary effort, outside the

<sup>1</sup> *Prevention of Crime Act*, 1908, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> See chap. vi and Appendix E of *Prisons and Borstals* (H.M.S.O., 1945).

<sup>3</sup> A short-lived, but noteworthy, attempt to deal with the problem of juvenile delinquency was made by Homer Lane at Batcombe in Dorsetshire (1914-18). It was modelled on the Junior Republics started in America by W. R. George. Consult Bazeley, *Homer Lane and the Little Commonwealth*.



schools to meet the physical, mental, and spiritual needs of young people. The Young Men's Christian Association, for example, dates from as early as 1844. It started with twelve members and was founded to promote "the spiritual welfare of young men engaged in the drapery and other trades by the introduction of religious services among them." During the last 100 years the Y.M.C.A. has expanded enormously both in its numbers and in the range of its activities. The Y.W.C.A. dates from 1853. The National Associations of Boys' Clubs and of Girls' Clubs also have a large membership and many affiliated clubs, which provide social and intellectual opportunities, particularly for young workers. The pioneer of 'uniformed' organisations is the Boys' Brigade, founded in 1883. It has a semi-military organisation and is definitely religious in character. The Boy Scouts, which owe their origin in 1908 to the genius of Lord Baden-Powell, have since become a world-wide movement and have been followed by the Girl Guides, who came into existence in 1910. All these agencies have not only had a great social significance, but they have also helped to widen popular ideas as to what education really means, and they have thus reacted beneficially on the curriculum and organisation of schools. In estimating the development of 'youth service' in recent years it is important, therefore, not to overlook the contribution which, during so long a period, has been made by these, and many other, voluntary bodies.

So far as the State was concerned, its interest is of much more recent growth and at first was directed mainly towards the physical welfare of young people. This may not have been altogether unconnected with military considerations and with the deterioration of political conditions on the Continent of Europe. In 1935 the silver jubilee of King George V was commemorated by the establishment of the

King George's Jubilee Trust. The funds raised were devoted largely to the purchase of playing-fields. The National Fitness Council was set up in 1937 to administer Government grants for improving physical training and providing facilities for recreation. But in September 1939 the National Fitness Council was replaced by the National Youth Committee, which took a wider view of what 'youth welfare' meant; and this was made clear in a circular (No. 1486) of more than usual importance, issued by the Board of Education in November of the same year. It pointed out that in spite of the efforts of the voluntary organisations and of the L.E.A.s there was still a lack of provision of opportunities for the social and physical development of boys and girls between the ages of fourteen and twenty, who had ceased full-time education. It urged every L.E.A. to "take steps to see that properly constituted Youth Committees exist in their areas." The duty of these committees would be to ascertain local needs and decide where assistance could best be given, and by so doing to strengthen the hands of local authorities and voluntary organisations. There was a large response to this appeal, and in a further circular (No. 1503) of March 1940 the Board made clear the grants which were available for youth service and the conditions under which they would be made. In June 1940 the Board issued yet another circular (1516), entitled *The Challenge of Youth*, which was designed to give some guidance to L.E.A. Youth Committees on the general aim and scope of their work. This was defined as "developing the whole personality of individual boys and girls to enable them to take their place as full members of a free community." Thus youth welfare was recognised as a province of further education side by side with primary and secondary education. There was to be no State-controlled uniformity. The function of the State was to focus the efforts of youth service,

and to supplement the resources of voluntary organisations. The L.E.A.s' part was to encourage existing organisations and fill up gaps where they existed. Thus there should be no clash between statutory and voluntary effort, but rather "variety of approach with a common purpose."

The situation had something in common with that in the field of elementary education in 1870; and it is obvious that the Board of Education were anxious to avoid any of the possible difficulties which the existence of a 'dual system' might involve. In November 1940 a circular (No. 1529), dealing with Youth, Physical Recreation, and Service, announced that a Directorate of Physical Recreation was to be set up in order "to strengthen the Service of Youth on a side on which it is at present liable to be increasingly handicapped," owing to the calling-up of many organisers and leaders of physical recreation, and the commandeering of premises and playing-fields. Reference was also made to the Youth Service Corps, which had been started in Suffolk under the title of 'Youth Squads,' in order to encourage young people, on their own initiative, to organise and undertake jobs of national importance. A further impulse to the youth organisations was given by the Government's decision at the end of 1941 that all boys and girls between the ages of sixteen and eighteen should be required to register. After doing this, those who had not already associated themselves with some youth organisation were interviewed and encouraged to do so.

Meanwhile, under the impact of the war, various types of pre-service training were becoming available. For many years past the public schools and other secondary schools had possessed contingents of the junior<sup>1</sup> Officers' Training Corps. This system had grown out of the volunteer movement of the 1860's, and the school 'cadet corps'—as they had

<sup>1</sup> The senior O.T.C.s were attached to universities.

been called—were reorganised as part of the Territorial Force in 1908. Their contingents were recognised by the War Office, and they received a grant in respect of every cadet who became 'efficient.' But the scheme had in view only the training of future officers, and it was restricted to the type of school from which a supply of such candidates would chiefly be recruited. The application of conscription, not only to men, but even to women, during the second World War, enormously increased the demand for pre-service training. In 1941 the Air Training Corps, for boys of sixteen (subsequently fourteen) to eighteen, came into existence, and it was supplemented by Sea Cadets and Army Cadets. Other pre-service organisations catered for girls. In some cases these pre-service units were actually attached to schools, as the original O.T.C.s had been. The pre-service organisations, though largely the outcome of wartime conditions, were not simply concerned with preparatory military training: they catered for the social and recreative needs of their members and they were in a very real sense 'youth organisations.'

In 1942 the National Youth Committee, which had been responsible for developing facilities for youth welfare and starting off the L.E.A.s on their activities in this field, was dissolved and replaced by the National Youth Advisory Council. It included representatives of all kinds of youth organisation—voluntary and statutory—as well as the pre-service corps and churches and employers. Its function was to consider and advise on problems remitted to it by the Board of Education, to act as a channel by which information concerning the Youth Service and its problems could reach the Board, and to train men to originate ideas for the improvement of the Youth Service and to put suggestions to the Board. One of the chief problems which youth organisations of all kinds have had to face is the training of

those who, perhaps rather unfortunately, are called 'youth leaders.' Many of the voluntary bodies already have their own schemes, but much has also been done by universities and training colleges; and it is obvious that there must—or should—be a close relationship between the training of these 'leaders' and of those who are to teach in schools. The McNair Committee gave considerable attention to these problems. They recommended that three-year courses of training should be provided to enable men and women to qualify for full-time posts as youth leaders; but that in cases where a candidate had already had adequate experience of this kind of work, the course might be shorter, though not less than a year. They further desired that service in youth organisations should be linked up with ordinary teaching in schools. To this end they suggested that the salaries of youth leaders should be comparable with those paid to teachers and that service in a youth organisation should be made pensionable. To facilitate easy transference from the one type of service to the other, it would be necessary to link their superannuation schemes. It was hoped that the training of youth leaders "during the first five years should be regarded as experimental, and that before the end of that period the Board of Education should review the experience of each area with a view to systematising, so far as may be necessary, the qualifications required for recognition as a youth leader and outlining the nature of the courses of training which they will recognise and aid."<sup>1</sup> It is obvious that an adequate supply of suitable and well-qualified leaders is essential to the successful development of youth service as an integral part of the national system of education.

<sup>1</sup> McNair Report, p. 147.

## *Chapter XXXII*

### THE WAR AND THE 1944 ACT

Evacuation and its Effects. The Green Book and the White Paper. The Butler Act and its Implications.

THE outbreak of the second World War in September 1939 had disastrous effects on the national system of education. Before the actual declaration of hostilities a large proportion of children were evacuated from urban areas which it was expected would be the object of enemy air attacks, and they were moved to reception areas where it was hoped they would be safe. It is difficult to make generalisations about so complex an operation, and conditions varied enormously as between one district and another. The administration of the evacuation scheme was shared between the Ministries of Health, of Transport, and of Home Security, with the co-operation of the Board of Education. The actual evacuating and transport were on the whole efficient and successful; but most of the real difficulties arose in the reception areas. There was first the problem of billets for the children. Even more difficult was the provision of school places for the hosts of pupils who flowed into the reception areas. In some cases a 'double-shift' system was put into force, by which the home school and the visiting school used the same buildings at different times. This cut down the actual hours of teaching in both schools, but outdoor activities of some kind were arranged by the school authorities for the off-sessions. Another method was to put the evacuated school into some hall or similar building, which was seldom well adapted to this purpose. Sometimes a school had to work as best it could in several buildings situated at some distance one from another. A third scheme for dealing with evacuated children was to absorb them into existing schools in the reception areas. This resulted in overcrowded classes

and all kinds of time-table difficulties. As the Permanent Secretary of the Board of Education said in 1939,<sup>1</sup> "The type of senior school provided in a rural area is something very different, both in scope of buildings and in types of subjects taught, from a senior school provided in a highly urbanised area."

The general result has been roundly described as an "educational mess";<sup>2</sup> but the effects of it were minimised by the devoted work of inspectors of the Board of Education and of L.E.A. officials and of the heads and assistant teachers of evacuated and receiving schools alike. Their names were conspicuously absent from the Honours Lists, but no body of civilians served their country better during the stress of war. There were also some positive benefits to be gained from evacuation. Against the loss due to lack of proper buildings or equipment or grading may be set the claim that in many cases evacuated children benefited in body and mind alike by being moved from urban to rural areas. Town and country had for too long been "two Englands." Now they were brought together as never before. The children—and their teachers too—found new interests, new ways of approach to their work, new experiences, a new freedom from routine. But because evacuation was voluntary and not compulsory, a large number of children were kept in the danger zone. In January 1940 the percentage remaining in the evacuation areas varied from 62 per cent. in Liverpool to 97 per cent. in Rotherham. The average for all such areas was 80 per cent.<sup>3</sup> But in the so-called 'vulnerable' districts all State schools, after the evacuation had been completed, were closed by Government order, and the buildings were taken over for all kinds of 'civil defence' organisations, or by the military

<sup>1</sup> Sir Maurice Holmes in evidence before Select Committee on Estimates (*Minutes*, p. 192).

<sup>2</sup> Padley and Cole, *Evacuation Survey*, p. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, table 1, pp. 46-7.

authorities. Thus the work of education practically ceased. Attempts were made in some places to provide a minimum of education for unevacuated children by sending peripatetic teachers to instruct them in their homes—a not very satisfactory expedient. The situation became so serious that on February 7th, 1940, L.E.A.s were instructed by the Board to prepare to resume the operation of compulsory school attendance. By the end of the year the number of children left in London had been reduced to 80,000, of whom 30,000 were at school. But meanwhile incalculable damage had been done. It was said that many children had forgotten how to read, and that even those who remained in schools in evacuation areas had to spend a large part of their time in air-raid shelters, where no kind of satisfactory instruction could be given.

The national system of education, like our bombed cities, suffered grievously during the war; but those responsible for it and interested in it—like the inhabitants of those cities—carried on, improvising and repairing the damage wherever it was possible, and looking forward always to reconstruction on better lines than had ever been in the past. It is not without significance that the Education Acts of 1870, 1902, 1918, and 1944 were passed in a time of war; and it would seem that men's minds, in a revulsion against the folly and waste and false values of war, turn to education as the one hope for the future—though there are not wanting those also who are interested in education primarily as a means of promoting military efficiency. The great danger is that the lesson may be forgotten when the emergency is past. It is certainly true that public opinion during the war years was increasingly interested in education and increasingly determined to make educational facilities more adequate and more easily accessible to those who could profit by them. A scheme for putting these rather vague



aspirations into practice was outlined in a tentative document issued in June 1941. It had been drawn up by some officials of the Board of Education and is usually known as the 'Green Book.' The object of this memorandum was to serve as a basis of preliminary talks between the Board and the accredited representatives of local authorities, teachers' associations, and other local bodies with which the Board was associated in the educational service. The document was issued to the organisations concerned and was marked 'confidential'; but, as Mr. Lester Smith observes,<sup>1</sup> "it was distributed in such a blaze of secrecy that it achieved an unusual degree of publicity." In answer to questions in the House of Commons, the President of the Board, Mr. R. A. Butler, promised to publish a short statement indicating the major subjects covered by the memorandum. This summary appeared in October 1941; but, whereas the original document had made detailed and definite suggestions covering almost every aspect of national education, the so-called 'summary' consisted of a list of subjects for discussion, set largely in the form of questions. It included such topics as the raising of the school-leaving age and the allowing of exemptions, the re-defining of primary and secondary education, and the justification for retaining separate L.E.A.s for dealing only with primary education. Other subjects suggested for debate were free secondary schooling and one code for all types of secondary education; the promotion of the physical well-being of children and young people; youth service; an extended system of technical training; the provision of nursery schools; the recruitment, training, and remuneration of teachers; the working of the 'dual system'; the establishment of a unified system of aid to enable students to proceed to universities.

<sup>1</sup>*To Whom do Schools Belong?*, p. 202.

The appearance of the 'Green Book' provoked a considerable response from the organisations and authorities which received it, and there followed a spate of memoranda dealing with educational reform issued by organisations of many types—local authorities, political bodies, churches, and professional associations. Mr. Butler and Mr. Chuter Ede, the Parliamentary Secretary of the Board of Education, gave the fullest consideration to this response, interviewing deputations and touring the country. The results of their labours were shown in a parliamentary White Paper, issued in July 1943, and bearing the title *Educational Reconstruction*. *The Times*<sup>1</sup> not unjustly called it a landmark in English education, and said that it promised "the greatest and grandest educational advance since 1870." Its central proposal was that the statutory system of public education should be organised in three progressive stages—primary, secondary, and further education. This was indeed the logical outcome of the scheme first adumbrated in the *Hadow Report*. 'Elementary' education would disappear; there would be no longer 'elementary' schools taking children up to the age of fourteen or fifteen and overlapping with 'secondary' schools receiving pupils from the age of eleven or even younger. The system of local educational administration would also have to be adjusted to this new lay-out. The school-leaving age should be raised to fifteen without exceptions, and ultimately to sixteen; and fees should be abolished in all maintained secondary schools. Compulsory part-time education in working hours should be provided for young persons up to the age of sixteen. Nursery schools should be established wherever they were needed. The abolition of the special-place examination and the adoption of "other arrangements for the classification of the children when they passed from primary to secondary

<sup>1</sup> July 24th, 1943.

schools" would free junior schools from the evil effects of a competitive test and help them to foster "the potentialities of children at an age when their minds are nimble and receptive, their curiosity strong, their imagination fertile, and their spirits high"—a delightful phrase. The White Paper also dealt with provision for technical and adult education and for youth service. It referred to the need for reform in methods of recruiting and training teachers—a subject which was at the time being investigated by the McNair Committee—and to the problem of access to the universities, with which the Norwood Committee was also dealing. The administrative problems involved in the existence of the dual system were also discussed, and in order to give increased assistance to voluntary schools, with a corresponding extension of public control, it was proposed to revive the provisions of the Education Act of 1936.

The White Paper received a cordial welcome. In a two days' debate on educational reconstruction the House of Commons "showed itself of one mind to a degree rare in Parliamentary annals. . . Not a single voice was raised in favour of holding up or whittling down any one of the proposals for educational advance."<sup>1</sup> Mr. Butler was thus able to carry on with his hands strengthened. There were inevitable practical difficulties in launching so vast and complex a scheme of reform—the problem of recruiting and training a large enough body of teachers to work the plan; the inevitable provision of new schools and the renovation of old ones at a time when the building industry was severely handicapped by war conditions; the "ancient and complicated problem of the dual system"—as Mr. Butler called it; the unwillingness of Part III authorities to forgo their control of elementary education. But patience and goodwill smoothed out many of these difficulties, and when in

<sup>1</sup> *The Times*, July 31st, 1943.

January 1944 Mr Butler laid his Education Bill before the House of Commons it was debated in an atmosphere very different from that in which most educational legislation had previously been carried through. The Bill became law on August 3rd, 1944; as Mr. H. C. Dent has said, it "makes possible as important and substantial an advance in public education as this country has ever known."<sup>1</sup>

The Education Act of 1944 is set out in five parts, of which the last deals mainly with the bringing of the Act into operation and the definition of various terms used in it. An attempt will therefore be made to summarise only the other four parts which contain the gist of the reforms which the Act involves. The first clauses deal with the Central Administration. The Board was replaced by a Ministry of Education.<sup>2</sup> The duty of the Minister is "to promote the education of the people of England and Wales and the progressive development of institutions devoted to that purpose, and to secure the effective execution by local authorities, under his control and direction, of the national policy for providing a varied and comprehensive educational service in every area."<sup>3</sup> The Act also brought into existence two advisory councils, one for England and one for Wales, which would have wider scope than the old Consultative Committee; their duty would be to advise the Minister, not only upon questions referred to them by him, but also upon such matters connected with educational theory and practice as they thought fit.

The Act goes on to deal with the statutory system of education. The duty of L.E.A.s. to maintain and keep efficient all public elementary schools in their areas was converted into a duty to secure adequate provision of both

<sup>1</sup> Dent, *The Education Act*, 1944, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> An Education Bill, introduced by the Duke of Marlborough in 1868, had proposed the appointment of a Minister of Education.

<sup>3</sup> *Education Act*, 1944, part I, § 1.

primary and secondary schools. This meant that from April 1st, 1945, when this part of the Act came into operation, the 169 existing Part III authorities would be abolished. There had been much heartburning on this subject, and for this reason a compromise had been effected. It was set out in the first Schedule to the Act. Where two or more counties or county boroughs were too small to undertake by themselves the full educational responsibilities of their area, a joint education board might be created for this purpose. Moreover, bodies called 'divisional executives' could be set up in counties and empowered in their own areas to exercise on behalf of the L.E.A. "such functions relating to primary and secondary education as may be specified."<sup>1</sup> With the consent of the Minister functions relating to further education might also be delegated to them. Thus to some extent they took the place of the former Part III authorities; but the L.E.A. was not empowered to delegate to these divisional executives the power of borrowing money or raising a rate. A rather complex arrangement was made by which schemes of divisional administration were to be determined.

By Section 11 of the Act every L.E.A. was required to survey the educational facilities and needs of its area and to submit, within a year of April 1st, 1945, a development plan covering the whole field of primary and secondary education. In doing so, it had to keep in view the new structure of the educational system. The category 'elementary' was abolished and, in the words of the Act, "the statutory system of public education shall be organised in three progressive stages to be known as primary education, secondary education, and further education; and it shall be the duty of the local education authority for every area, so far as their powers extend, to contribute towards the spiritual,

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, First Schedule, part iii.

moral, mental, and physical development of the community by securing that efficient education throughout those stages shall be available to meet the needs of the population of their area.”<sup>1</sup> In order to do this L.E.A.s were required to secure an adequate provision of schools for primary and secondary education in separate institutions. They were also to see that nursery schools or nursery classes were available for children under five, and that the needs of children suffering from any disability of mind or body should be met in special schools. The authorities were to have regard to “the expediency of securing the provision of boarding accommodation, either in boarding schools or otherwise, for pupils for whom education as boarders is considered by their parents and by the authority to be desirable.”<sup>2</sup>

The thorny problem of ‘dual control’ was met by a compromise, which all the parties concerned agreed to accept—a striking example of the new spirit in which the Bill was debated. As all types of post-primary school now became ‘secondary,’ this implied an extension of the ‘dual system.’ Voluntary schools were divided into three classes. ‘Aided’ schools were eligible for a 50 per cent. grant towards external repairs and alterations, but the salaries of their teachers and the cost of other repairs were to be borne by the L.E.A. The second class—the ‘special-agreement’ schools—was a product of the 1936 Act. In order to aid voluntary schools in carrying out the reorganisation necessitated by the Hadow scheme and the proposed raising of the school-leaving age, L.E.A.s had been enabled to enter into agreements with managers to make grants of between 50 per cent. and 75 per cent. towards the cost of erecting or extending non-provided schools for senior pupils.<sup>3</sup> Five hundred and nineteen agreements had been made, but

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 8.

<sup>3</sup> See *supra*, p. 279.

owing to the outbreak of war only thirty-seven had materialised. The 1944 Act provided that the remaining agreements could be revived and repeated the regulation of the 1936 Act with regard to 'reserved' teachers. Finally there was the class of 'controlled' schools. Here the whole cost of maintenance fell on the L.E.A. It was enacted that the L.E.A. must inform the managers or governors of a controlled voluntary school before appointing any particular candidate as head of it, and must consult them as to the appointment of reserved teachers for religious instruction.

The primary and secondary schools (other than nursery and special schools) which were maintained by an L.E.A., and which prior to the Act had been called 'provided,' were renamed county schools. Here the appointment and dismissal of teachers would be in the hands of the authority, unless the rules of management or articles of government provided otherwise; so also as regards the instruction, both religious and secular. In addition to the primary and secondary schools—whether they were 'county' or voluntary (with its three subdivisions)—there were also the nursery schools and the special schools. The direct-grant schools, which received their aid direct from the central authority, and the independent schools remained apart. Thus the Act retained a variety of types of school, differing as to their administration and purpose, and in their relation to the local authorities. It laid down that in every county and voluntary school religious instruction should be given, and that the school day should begin with an act of collective worship; though, of course, the right of withdrawal on conscientious grounds was safeguarded. This is the first time in our educational history that religious instruction and 'school prayers' have been specifically enforced by Act of Parliament, and it affords striking evidence of our national unwillingness to add 'secular' to the formula 'uni-

versal, compulsory, and gratuitous,' which, as Adamson points out, was the "aim in the educational sphere which English Radicals and Liberals strove to attain throughout the nineteenth century."<sup>1</sup> But it was laid down in Clause 36 of the Act that in a county school the religious instruction should be in accordance with an 'agreed syllabus,'<sup>2</sup> and that the collective act of worship should not be distinctive of any particular denomination. In a controlled school denominational religious instruction might be given "during not more than two periods in each week."<sup>3</sup> In aided and special-agreement schools the religious teaching "shall be under the control of the managers or governors of the school and shall be in accordance with any provisions of the trust deed relating to the school, or, where provision for that purpose is not made by such a deed, in accordance with the practice observed in the school before it became a voluntary school."<sup>4</sup>

The Act went on to deal with the problem of school governance. Primary schools were to have a body of not less than six 'managers,' while secondary schools would have 'governors' whose numbers were not limited in this way. The L.E.A. was to appoint the governing or managing body of a county school, and was to be represented on that of a voluntary school. If it appeared desirable, an L.E.A. could set up a single governing body for two or more of its maintained schools, whether county or voluntary. Other important provisions of the Act were the raising of the school-leaving age to fifteen without exemptions from a date which was decided to be April 1st, 1945, but which was subsequently postponed. The age was to be further raised to sixteen as soon as conditions made it possible. In addition, the provisions of the Fisher Act with regard to day

<sup>1</sup> *English Education, 1760-1902*, p. 7.

<sup>2</sup> See *supra*, 280 n.

<sup>3</sup> *Education Act, 1944*, § 27.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, § 28.



continuation schools were to be revived and fully implemented. A duty was laid on L.E.A.s to establish, not later than three years after the coming into operation of Part II of the Act, institutions which would be known as county colleges. These would give part-time education in working hours to young persons up to the age of eighteen for 330 hours in a year. The responsibility for attendance at such a college was laid upon the young person himself, and not upon his parents, and it would be the duty of the L.E.A. to direct him, by means of a 'college attendance order,' to attend at a specified centre. The Act further abolished fees for day pupils in schools maintained by L.E.A.s—secondary as well as primary—and charges for boarding could also be remitted. In spite of the recommendations of the Fleming Committee, fees were retained in direct-grant schools, except, of course, for those pupils who held 'free or reserved places.' L.E.A.s were empowered to provide boots and clothing for children who needed them, but the cost could be recovered from parents who were able to pay. In addition, meals, milk and other refreshments were to be provided. The conditions of employment of young people were also adapted so as to meet the new situation created by the raising of the school-leaving age and the institution of county colleges.

Part III of the Act (which was to come into effect on an 'appointed day') was concerned with 'independent' schools. It provided for the inspection and registration of private schools. If a school were regarded as unsatisfactory, it might be refused registration or removed from the register; but the proprietor would be given 'notice of complaint' before such a step was taken, and he would have the right of appeal to an Independent Schools Tribunal. Part IV covered a number of general provisions. L.E.A.s were given power to defray the necessary incidental expenses of

children attending maintained schools, and also the fees and expenses of pupils in fee-charging schools. They were empowered to grant scholarships and to aid educational research. The Minister was to see that salary scales for teachers, as recommended by the committee or committees appointed by him to deal with this matter and as approved by him, were duly paid by L.E.A.s. No woman was to be debarred from holding a post as a teacher by reason of marriage.

The 1944 Education Act contains 122 clauses and eight schedules. For this reason it is not easy to make a *précis* of it; but enough, perhaps, has been said to show its importance. The Acts of 1870, 1902, 1918, 1936, and 1944, taken together, afford an excellent example of what Dicey calls "our inveterate prejudice for fragmentary and gradual legislation."<sup>1</sup> We are now at last presented with a co-ordinated system of national education. Hitherto there had been a system of 'elementary' schools taking pupils up to the age of fourteen. These had gradually developed out of a plan to provide education of an inferior kind for children of the poorer classes, and, in spite of the great advance—especially since 1902—they had never entirely lost this stigma. Overlapping with this system were the 'secondary' schools taking in pupils at the age of about eleven and keeping them till sixteen or later. These had inherited the tradition of the old endowed schools with their more academic curriculum; and although this too had been greatly modified with the passage of time, they tended to retain something of their social superiority. The 1944 Act swept away the conception of 'elementary' education and provided a framework in which the recommendations of the *Hadow Report*, with its insistence on 'parity of status' for all forms of post-primary education, could be realised.

<sup>1</sup> *Law and Opinion in England*, p. 28.

But it said nothing about the 'types' of secondary school,<sup>1</sup> with which the Hadow, Spens, and Norwood Committees had been so much concerned; and therefore it did not raise the crucial problem of how to select children for post-primary education if the different types are retained. It is good to realise with Tacitus that a thing is not necessarily inferior because it is different;<sup>2</sup> but it is one thing to provide machinery and another thing to make it work. For example, it is not enough to rename a 'senior' school 'secondary,' so long as its buildings and equipment are far inferior to those of a neighbouring grammar school which has always enjoyed this title. The general public, who may not be particularly interested in educational legislation, tends to judge of these matters differently from the administrator.

There remained, more-over, after the passing of the Act some anomalies which seemed to many people to counter-act its spirit. Fees in maintained secondary schools were abolished, but they were retained in direct-grant schools. Many of these latter schools at once raised their fees, and by so doing emphasised the spirit of social exclusiveness which the Act was designed to exorcise. The cleavage was now more marked than ever between the free maintained secondary school and the fee-charging direct-grant school. It is true that some of the direct-grant schools decided to become maintained schools; but a few, on the other hand, by raising endowment funds, gave up their direct grant and became independent schools. The continued existence of schools of this type, outside the national system, is also a problem which awaits solution. Even if, as the Fleming Report suggested, independent schools were to take 25 per cent. of their pupils as free-placers from the State-aided schools, it would still be possible for well-to-do parents to secure a

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, pp. 309-312.

<sup>2</sup> "Nec statim deterius esse quod diversum est." *Dialogus de Oratoribus*, chap. 18.

majority of the places in such schools, solely by reason of their ability to pay the high fees which are charged. It would also, presumably, still be possible to enter a boy for such a school as soon as he is born; and, if so, the test of 'ability to profit' is meaningless. The criticism has therefore been made that the 'privileged' school still exists in spite of the Act; and in addition to the difficulty of making the public believe that there is 'parity of status' as between the various types of free secondary school, there may remain the further problem of making it clear that the maintained grammar school is not in some way an inferior type of institution to the direct-grant or independent school. As the *Journal of Education* has said,<sup>1</sup> "the maintained grammar schools now include very many of ancient and more recent foundation whose repute and academic standing are superior to those of many direct-grant and independent schools. . . . Parity of conditions is a means to an end; the end is equality of educational opportunity. But equality of opportunity will be further from realisation if the maintained grammar schools, through which alone the majority of able children can reach the universities and the professions, are less able than at present to compete on equal terms with the direct-grant and independent schools, above all for teachers of high academic attainments on whose quality depend the futures of their pupils." It will take time—as indeed past experience has shown—to convince the public that an education for which one pays is not intrinsically superior to one which is given free.

As in the case of the Education Bills of 1870 and 1902, the question of religious education took a prominent place in the debates on the Education Bill of 1944. In the White Paper it had been stated that "there has been a very general wish, not confined to representatives of the Churches, that

<sup>1</sup>September 1945, pp. 426-7.

religious education should be given a more defined place in the life and work of the schools." To meet this 'very general wish' the 1944 Act, as has been said, made it compulsory that every county school, as well as every voluntary school, should give religious instruction and begin its day with an act of collective worship. How far legislation of this kind will secure a religious basis for national education remains to be seen. Politicians and ecclesiastics do not always realise that school services and religious instruction, if they are perfunctory and uninspired, may—and often do—have the very opposite effect to that which is desired; and this applies quite as much to the churches themselves as to the schools. In both cases everything depends on the individual parsons or teachers concerned, for 'religion is caught, not taught.' It may have been politically expedient to include these provisions as to compulsory religious instruction and exercises in the Act, because they met the objections of those who believed that these things are in some sense a safeguard of a good education. But in actual fact they are no safeguard whatever. In the last resort the efficiency of machinery of this kind, whether provided by an Act of Parliament or not, depends on the teachers who work it.

Another difficulty which may arise in connection with the 1944 Act is a financial one. Many school buildings, especially those in rural areas and belonging to the voluntary bodies, are out of date and unsatisfactory. Dr. F. Spencer has estimated that four out of every five 'elementary' schools should be pulled down and rebuilt. Moreover, owing to enemy action during the war of 1939-45, school accommodation for some 200,000 pupils was destroyed; and the raising of the school-leaving age to fifteen implied the provision of nearly 400,000 new school places. If it were raised to sixteen, double this number would be required.

Thus a very large building programme was involved. But even more important was the recruitment of a sufficient number of trained teachers. To cope with the increase in pupils and to make possible the reduction in the size of classes it was estimated that some 70,000 extra teachers must be found ; and these had also to be trained before the Act could become fully operative. The war had made large inroads in the teaching personnel; the entry of men, in particular, to the profession had fallen off very greatly. To meet this emergency a scheme was put forward in 1943 by which candidates considered suitable could be recruited from the Services or other walks of life and, after a one-year's intensive course in a specially organised college, could be launched as 'qualified' teachers. The emergency colleges were improvised by L.E.A.s acting as agents of the Minister of Education, and the full cost of them was met by the Exchequer. The scheme offered interesting possibilities, though the shortness of the training course, even if it were a necessity, was widely felt to be a regrettable feature. Hitherto the normal way of entry into the teaching profession had been via a secondary school and a training college or university. This may have tended to encourage too exclusively an academic outlook on the part of those who had been trained in this way, and to draw teachers from a wider and more varied field of recruitment may have beneficial results. At the same time some of the advantages claimed for this emergency scheme were probably due to wishful thinking on the part of those at the Ministry of Education and elsewhere who were responsible for organising it.

It is obvious that the Education Act of 1944 offers opportunities of progress in national education such as have never been presented before; but to realise those opportunities will be an uphill task and will take time. The Act

was passed owing to the co-operation of all political parties, and there was a noticeable absence of the sectarian bitterness and unwillingness to compromise which marked the passage of the 1870 and 1902 Acts. But, as the history of the 1918 Act reminds us, it is possible for provisions to remain on the Statute Book, but to be inoperative in practice. Mr. H. C. Dent wisely reminds us that putting the Act into operation "will be the more difficult in that it will have to be carried out during a period of economic and social dislocation and simultaneously with other massive schemes of reconstruction."<sup>1</sup> We can agree with him also when he says that the Act "lays unprecedented obligations upon both public authorities and the private citizen. It may make all the difference between a happy and glorious future for our country and an unhappy and inglorious one. To make it a real success, the full co-operation of every citizen will be required."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dent, *The Education Act*, 1944, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 4.

## Chapter XXXIII

### RECENT EDUCATIONAL THEORY

The Work of the Specialists. The Individual and the Community. Mental Testing.  
Sir Percy Nunn and his Critics.

IN the second column of Appendix II will be found a list of books dealing with education and written by English authors during the period covered by the present volume. It reveals the interesting fact that the works which had most influence on educational thought in the nineteenth century date almost wholly from the eighteen-fifties and sixties. This is the period of Newman's *Idea of a University* and Darwin's *Origin of Species*, of many of the writings of J. S. Mill and Ruskin and Kingsley and Huxley and F. D. Maurice, of Spencer's *Education* and Matthew Arnold's *Culture and Anarchy*. It is, in fact, as Professor Archer has called it, an 'age of the prophets.' It was a period when Benthamite individualism was still the current political theory, and utilitarianism, as set forth in the writings of J. S. Mill and Herbert Spencer, had not yet lost its force. But the latter part of the period marks the beginnings of that collectivist trend of public opinion which has increased in force and volume from that time down to the present.<sup>1</sup> Some of our mid-century educational 'prophets' already show a break with the earlier individualism of the Bentham School.<sup>2</sup> Kingsley, for example, in a speech at Bristol in 1869, said: "It is the duty of the State, I hold, to educate all alike in those matters which are common to them as citizens."<sup>3</sup> Ruskin demands that "there should be training schools for youth established at Government cost and under

<sup>1</sup> Cf. "Socialistic ideas were, it is submitted, in no way part of dominant legislative opinion earlier than 1865, and their influence on legislation did not become perceptible till some years later, say till 1868 or 1870, or dominant till say 1880." Dicey, *Law and Opinion in England*, p. 66.

<sup>2</sup> For Huxley's position see *supra*, p. 166.

<sup>3</sup> *Life and Letters of Charles Kingsley*, vol. ii, p. 228.



Government discipline over the whole country; that every child born in the country should at the parents' wish be permitted (and, in certain cases, be under penalty required) to pass through them."<sup>1</sup> Forces of this kind played their part in the passing of the 1870 Act; but once a national system of elementary education is in being, the supply of seminal books on education seems to give out. The activity is now seen in the Legislature, and the Act of 1870 initiates a long series of further Acts dealing with national education or some aspect of it. In fact the progress of socialism is nowhere more marked than in the sphere of education. As Dicey says: "If a student once realises that the education of the English people was, during the earlier part of the nineteenth century, in no sense a national concern, he will see that our present system is a monument to the increasing predominance of collectivism."<sup>2</sup> He wrote those words in 1905, and the 'predominance' of which he speaks is today far more marked than it was at the beginning of the century.

But the existence of a great activity carried on to a large extent under public management is bound sooner or later to stimulate criticism or questioning as to its ultimate aim and the methods by which that aim may best be achieved. The educational literature of the last three decades of the nineteenth century consisted, to a considerable extent, of manuals of practice for the use of students in training colleges and teachers in State-aided schools. They did not, as a rule, raise any final issues about the problems of education, but they furnished techniques which could be applied forthwith in the class-room. So far as they concerned themselves with theory, they adopted a rather crude interpretation of the psychological theories which had been set

*Unto this Last*, Preface, § 6.

<sup>2</sup> Dicey, *Law and Opinion in England*, p. 278.

forth by the German philosopher Herbart (1776-1841), and developed by his followers. They tended to overlook the philosophical and ethical implications of his doctrines and to concentrate rather on deducing from them a psychological justification for a technique of teaching. They therefore stressed the correlation and concentration of studies, and, in particular, they formalised five (or four) 'steps,' which formed a convenient frame for the setting-out of a lesson. A theoretical basis for these methods was found in the Herbartian doctrine of apperception; but its application tended to result in what was little better than a mechanical device. Whatever there is of value in the Herbartian system has been extracted by Sir John Adams in his enlightening and entertaining *Herbartian Psychology applied to Education*.<sup>1</sup>

Towards the end of the last century, however, 'education' began to emerge as a university 'subject.' The 'Day Training Colleges,' as they were called, began their work in the early nineties. The institution of post-graduate diplomas in education, awarded by universities, necessitated something more than a study of a text-book of method on neo-Herbartian lines, such as had hitherto been used in the two-year training colleges. But it was not very easy to determine satisfactorily what the content of the education diploma course should be; and it is more than possible that this problem has even yet not been solved. A study of what was called 'educational psychology,' of some outlines of educational history gathered from a collection of essays, such as Quick's *Educational Reformers*, and of a philosophical work—passages from Plato's *Republic* for choice—together with some information about school hygiene and teaching methods (largely borrowed from the training-college syllabus)—usually formed the staple of the diploma course. One can hardly call this 'educational

<sup>1</sup> See Adamson, *English Education* 1760-1902, pp. 492-3.

science,' and it is very possible that there is no *science* of education. But a great deal has been done since the beginning of the present century to formulate some sort of philosophy—or philosophies—of education and to organise the knowledge that we have been able to acquire. This has been the work, not merely of philosophers and scientists who are outside the schools or training institutions—such as Prof. A. N. Whitehead, Sir Richard Livingstone, and Mr. Bertrand Russell—but even more of the professors of education and heads of university training-departments whom the new order of things brought into being. Among them a conspicuous part has been played by Sir John Adams, Sir Percy Nunn, and Sir Fred Clarke, of the London Institute of Education (London University), Dr. M. W. Keatinge of Oxford and Mr. Charles Fox of Cambridge, Prof. Findlay of Manchester, Prof. Campagnac of Liverpool, Prof. Godfrey Thomson of Edinburgh, and Prof. Valentine of Birmingham—to mention only a few.

It is a commonplace to say that education should imply the full development of the individual, and that this full development can be achieved only through the life of the community of which the individual forms part. That being so, modern English educational theory seems to have progressed along two lines which, if distinct, are very closely correlated. There has been firstly a close study of the individual to be educated—a process which has been assisted by methods which have been worked out by experimental psychologists; and secondly, a philosophical investigation of the social implications of education. A synthesis of these two lines of research may help us towards a determination of what should be the aim or aims of education in a community such as our own, so that the greatest benefit may accrue alike to society as a whole and to the individuals who comprise it.

The scientific study of the differences of individual minds has been made possible by the evolution of what is called 'mental testing.' We owe the conception of the mental test to Sir Francis Galton, a Cambridge scientist, whose *Enquiries into Human Faculty* first appeared in 1883. In this book he suggested statistical methods which he applied, for example, in an investigation into mental imagery.<sup>1</sup> He also designed pieces of apparatus for testing differences of sensation. Galton was for a time associated with J. McK. Cattell, who became professor of psychology in Columbia University. His pupil, Prof. E. C. Thorndike, whose work on mental testing is of outstanding importance, says that "Cattell refined Galton's methods and won recognition for the mental measurement of individuals as a standard division of psychology."<sup>2</sup> The work of Galton, although begun in this country, was for the time being taken over by investigators in other countries—notably America, France, and Germany. For example, the German psychologist Ebbinghaus (1850-1909) applied quantitative measurement to the testing of memory. At about the same period—i.e. in the last decade of the nineteenth century—the Frenchman Binet was working at tests of memory, attention, and other mental processes. In America W. C. Bagley was employing tests to measure motor ability, and from the results he calculated what he called a 'motor index.' Thus by the beginning of the twentieth century much had already been done in the devising of mental tests. But hitherto the work had been largely of an academic type; the practical application of the tests has been the work mainly of the past forty or fifty years. The process has been facilitated by the use of the correlation method extensively used by Prof. Spearman of the University of London. It furnishes a

<sup>1</sup> See *Enquiries*, etc., pp. 57-79.

<sup>2</sup> See Board of Education pamphlet *Psychological Tests of Educable Capacity*, p. 5.

technique which, though at first criticised, has been widely accepted. One of the results of its application was the exposition of the theory of a general ability (called by psychologists 'g'), underlying all the various mental activities that can be tested. The correlation formula was also used by the English psychologist Cyril Burt, who made tests of children in elementary schools in Oxford and Liverpool, and who directed his attention particularly to this problem of general intelligence. It appeared to be for the most part hereditary or inborn, and not acquired; and if this is so it has—as we have seen<sup>1</sup>—important implications for the educational administrator.

A contribution of great significance in the work of mental testing was made in 1908 by the Frenchmen Binet and Simon, when they put forward their Binet-Simon scale. In this scheme each test is classified under some age from three to thirteen, and the passing of the test for a specified age is correlated with the child's chronological age. If a child of five can manage to pass the tests for a child of seven, his mental age is two years in advance of his chronological age. The Binet-Simon scale was subsequently revised, but in principle it remained unchanged, and it gives us what Terman, the author of the 'Stanford Revision' (1916), called the 'Intelligence Quotient.' To obtain this, the mental age is multiplied by 100 and divided by the chronological age; so that the 'I.Q.' of the child mentioned above would be  $\frac{700}{50} = 140$ . But with the increasing use of psychological tests it has become more and more common in recent years to set group tests. An impetus to this practice was given during the 1914-18 war, when mental testing was extensively used in the American Army for sorting recruits. It would have been impossible to handle the two million men involved if individual tests had been

<sup>1</sup> See *supra*, pp. 311-312.

applied. Since that time the method of group testing has been increasingly employed in this country, especially in the selection of children for secondary education. It was first applied by the Bradford Education Authority in 1919 for their junior scholarship examination, and it has since become a standard practice. Group tests have been used by various colleges at the admission of students, and by the Civil Service and other public bodies. They also play their part in the technique of vocational guidance, and—as Dr. Cyril Burt and Prof. Schonell have shown<sup>1</sup>—they are of great service in the investigation of backwardness and delinquency. Their importance can hardly be questioned. So far as they go, they have been brought to a high degree of reliability and they have considerable diagnostic value. It is well to remember that they have their limitations and that they test only certain features of the whole personality; but they do provide a tool which—if its use is properly understood—may be of the greatest value to the educator and the sociologist alike.

The application of educational psychology to the individual child who is to be educated is seen not only in the development of mental testing, but also in many more general ways. The nursery-school movement, the treatment of delinquency, child-guidance clinics, 'youth service,' altered conceptions of what is meant by 'discipline,' experimentation with curriculum and school organisation—all these and many other modern tendencies in education are to a large extent the outcome of an attempt to understand the psychology of the individual child, and to organise and make practical use of the knowledge which has been obtained by observation and experiment. This attempt has resulted in a spate of treatises dealing with 'educational psychology' which have

<sup>1</sup> E.g. in Burt, *The Backward Child* and *The Young Delinquent*, and Schonell, *Backwardness in the Basic Subjects*.

appeared since the beginning of the present century.<sup>1</sup> But the interest in, and emphasis on, individuality in education are shown particularly in one of the greatest of modern works on educational theory—*Education: its Data and First Principles*, by Sir Percy Nunn (1870–1944). It first appeared in 1920, at a time when many progressive teachers in this country were much concerned about the educational implications of Hegelian views on State absolutism, which were gaining ground on the Continent of Europe. Against these doctrines Nunn roundly asserts that “Individuality is the ideal of life.”<sup>2</sup> The main theme of his book is set out as follows: “We shall stand throughout on the position that nothing good enters into the human world except in and through the free activities of individual men and women, and that educational practice must be shaped to accord with that truth. This view does not deny or minimise the responsibilities of a man to his fellows; for the individual life can develop only in terms of its own nature, and that is social as truly as it is ‘self-regarding.’ Nor does it deny the value of tradition and discipline or exclude the influences of religion. But it does deny the reality of any super-personal entity of which the single life, taken by itself, is but an insignificant element. It reaffirms the infinite value of the individual person; it reasserts his ultimate responsibility for his own destiny; and it accepts all the practical corollaries that assertion implies.”<sup>3</sup> The criticism has been made that the book ‘dates’—but so does every important work on education, because it is written against the social and political background of its time. Shortly before his death in 1944 Nunn completed a revised edition of his treatise,

<sup>1</sup> Among them may be mentioned: William James, *Talks to Teachers on Psychology* (1899); Lloyd Morgan, *Psychology for Teachers* (1907); Drever, *An Introduction to the Psychology of Education* (1922); and Fox, *Educational Psychology* (1925).

<sup>2</sup> Nunn, *Education: its Data and First Principles* (First Edition), p. 11.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 5.

with considerable alterations and additions. The history of Europe, however, since the end of the first World War had served only to strengthen the author's point of view. In this revised edition he says: "The central thesis of the book remains unchanged; it maintains that the primary aim of all educational effort should be to help boys and girls to achieve the highest degree of individual development of which they are capable."<sup>1</sup>

This 'central thesis' has not passed unchallenged, and the age-long problem of reconciling the claims of the individual and of society in education is once more raised. Prof. Campagnac, for example, in *Society and Solitude* examines critically the meaning of the term 'individuality';<sup>2</sup> and he goes on to say: "We are not ready to accept Individuality as the 'supreme educational end,' or to suppose that the end can be stated in any simple word or formula. The end when justly stated must also be illogically stated; it must be as various and as intolerant of strict definition as life itself. To seek individuality is good, but to lose it is good; to yield to society and to defy society are both proper tasks for men, who must be in the world and yet not of it; who must be themselves, but can only discover themselves by finding other selves than their own; who must die in order to live. It is granted, indeed, that the individual must make his contribution to the general welfare of the Society, the world, in which he lives; but the admission is followed by the claim that he must be free to make it as he chooses, in the form which he elects; and this is a freedom which the world cannot grant, because it would be a freedom without meaning."<sup>3</sup> Those are wise words; but though it may well be that Nunn lays less stress

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.* (Third Edition), p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> In chap. ix.

<sup>3</sup> Campagnac, *Society and Solitude*, p. 118.



than some other educational thinkers on the social function of education, he obviously does not overlook it. "Individuality," he says, "develops only in a social atmosphere where it can be fed on common interests and common activities," but he safeguards his thesis by claiming that "the idea that a main function of the school is to socialise its pupils in no wise contradicts the view that its true aim is to cultivate individuality."<sup>1</sup>

To Nunn, then, the school's true aim was "to cultivate individuality," though it did so "within the common life." Other modern educational theorists have put the stress on the other side, and have contended that the school is primarily a place where the individual is socialised. If that is to be fully achieved, it cannot be shut off from the greater community, like a monastery hidden in a desert or among the mountains. In order to fulfil its functions it must be closely linked with the community and an integral part of it. Society, through the medium of the school, puts its past achievements at the service of its future citizens; but at the same time its whole future is bound up with the school. The school is, in fact, the growing-point of the community. No one has realised this fact and its implications more fully than John Dewey. Although he is an American professor, he has exercised a great influence in this country. "The school," he says, "has been so set apart, so isolated from the ordinary conditions and motives of life, that the place where children are sent for discipline is the one place in the world where it is most difficult to get experience—the mother of all discipline worth the name."<sup>2</sup> Dewey complains that the school is too much regarded as something between teacher and pupil, or teacher and parent. He also points out that the changes in educational methods and curricula,

<sup>1</sup> Nunn, *Education: Its Data and First Principles*, p. 247.

<sup>2</sup> *The School and Society*, p. 15.

which have been brought about in recent times, are as much a product of social changes as are changes in industry or commerce. Thus Dewey finds the greatest value in those school activities which are productive—manual work, household arts, and co-operative activities. In practice we can import the economic life and conditions of the macrocosm of society into the microcosm of the school only to a limited extent; but, vast and complex as the social and economic system of the community is, the school must interpret it to the pupil.

The twentieth century has seen many political theories thrown into the melting-pot and the emergence of diverse types of community of a highly nationalistic kind. This has given added point to the questions: what should be the interrelation of the individual and the community, and what is the function of education in the State? Dewey makes the comment: "The so-called individualism of the eighteenth-century enlightenment was found to involve the notion of a society as broad as humanity, of whose progress the individual was to be the organ. But it lacked any agency for securing the development of its ideal, as was evidenced in its falling back upon Nature. The institutional idealistic philosophies of the nineteenth century supplied this lack by making the national State the agency, but in so doing narrowed the conception of the social aim to those who were members of the same political unit, and reintroduced the idea of the subordination of the individual to the institution."<sup>1</sup> Thus we have seen the employment of education in Nazi Germany and in Fascist Italy as frankly an instrument of State policy, and not as a means for the free development of the individual within the membership of the community. The States which called themselves 'democratic' were thus, as it were, challenged to rethink and

<sup>1</sup> *Democracy and Education*, pp. 115-16.

restate their theory of education. Nunn's championship of individuality was one answer to the challenge. But it is also taken up in the *Spens Report*. "Speaking broadly," it says, "the interest of the State is to see that the schools provide the means by which the nation's life may be maintained in its integrity from generation to generation; to make sure that the young are prepared to preserve—and some of them to advance—its standards in all modes of activity which are important to the common weal. In a democratic community it must 'educate its masters'; in communities of other types it must see that the citizens are trained for obedient and willing service. Underneath this explicit, overt educational activity of the State, working through laws and regulations, there is the unformulated but very real demand of the community that the young shall grow up in conformity with the national *ethos*."<sup>1</sup>

What in this country that *ethos* is, and how it can be interpreted to meet the educational needs of a community profoundly affected by war conditions, are questions discussed by Sir Fred Clarke in his *Education and Social Change*.<sup>2</sup> This book, the small size of which is out of all proportion to its importance, first appeared in 1940. The author "accepts unreservedly" what he calls "the sociological standpoint," and he aims at exhibiting its "concrete application to the field of English education." The book is governed by three main objectives: "(1) To provide some insight into the nature of the social influences by which the forms of English educational institutions have been determined and their practical objectives defined; (2) To formulate some analysis of the present situation in

<sup>1</sup> Pp. 147-8.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. "The present argument assumes that the tradition is capable of the necessary degree of adaptation, granted a sufficient occasion, and an adequate measure both of intelligence to recognise and of will to execute the new applications of ancient principles that will be called for." (*Op. cit.*, p. 2.)

England . . . (3) To estimate the degree to which the existing order is capable of adaptation to the demands which have to be faced, the demands of a régime consciously planned and directed towards the guaranteeing of freedom for diversity of personality in a social order much more thoroughly collectivist in working than any of which we have yet had experience."<sup>1</sup> The author therefore proceeds from a discussion of the historical determinants of English education to a critical account of the existing agencies for education—schools, both primary and secondary, institutions of further education, and all the other ‘informal organisations’ which testify to “continuing social vitality, to a continuing power of adaptation and creation in response to need.”<sup>2</sup> In looking to the future, Sir Fred Clarke contends that our “habit of thinking about education in terms of class . . . has made our educational categories and terminology the chaotic things they are. Our thinking is likely to be much more relevant both to actual social necessities and to the values of education as an instrument of social control and transformation if we keep it clear of any distracting ideas of a rigid class-structure.”<sup>3</sup> For this reason “unification of the system over the whole range” is advocated.<sup>4</sup> Since the book was published, the 1944 Education Act has given some expression to this scheme of unification; but it would seem that our national modes of thinking will have to be further modified if we are to divest ourselves entirely of “this habit of thinking about education in terms of class.” The 1944 Act left intact the public school, the private school, and the preparatory school, which must inevitably make “unification over the whole range” difficult, if not impossible. The justification for leaving them independent was stated to be the desirability of retaining variety in

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 41.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 48.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*

educational provision or of safeguarding their 'freedom'; but it may conceivably be argued that the new scheme was devised so as not to interfere too drastically with the existing class structure of the community. Doubtless education in the long run influences public opinion; but there is a danger that it may fail of its effect if it tries too eagerly to outpace public opinion. However, Sir Fred Clarke contends that: "The development of a popular philosophy of education is perhaps the most relevant example that could be given of an urgently needed change in basic attitudes. It is unlikely, in England, that such a philosophy would be sharply antagonistic to that which has been dominant hitherto. Its function would be to preside over the process of unifying the values of culture and usefulness, and to secure that, in so far as the educational system is an instrument of social selection, the criteria it applies shall be purely educational and used with no irrelevant bias."<sup>1</sup> If this could be achieved, then, he argues, education would be the fundamental principle by which the cohesion and continuance of society would be secured.

It is even yet the fashion in some quarters to disparage 'educational theory.' But education cannot be occupied solely with means and never with ends. The average teacher or administrator is of necessity so much occupied with routine that he has little opportunity to stop and think whither he should go, or how he should get there. The educational philosophers from the time of Plato downwards have helped us to see our way. The Greatest of them all said: "I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly." Unless our conception of education is informed by that kind of spirit, our legislation, codes, memoranda, curricula, and examinations may merely lead us into the wilderness. But if we regard education in

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 66.

terms of 'abundant life,' our aim becomes clearer; and an educational system drawn up and administered in that light will be our chief, and perhaps only real, safeguard in an age which otherwise can offer us only the destruction of our civilisation.

*Appendix I*

(See page 16)

COPY OF SCHOOLMASTER'S LICENCE TO TEACH (1769)  
PRESERVED IN THE NORWICH MUSEUM

JOHN GREENE, Clerk, Master of Arts, Commissary of the Rt. Rev. Father in God PHILIP, by Divine permission Lord Bishop of Norwich lawfully constituted, to our beloved in Christ Joseph Buck of Mattishall in the County of Norfolk and diocese of Norwich sendeth GREETING. WHEREAS by a creditable testimonial which we have received we are fully satisfied as well of your sober life and conversation as of your sufficient capacity to exercise the function of a schoolmaster, WE do therefore by these presents, so far as by law we may or can, give and grant unto you the said Joseph Buck our licence and ffaculty to instruct teach and inform any children in Grammar and other lawful and honest Documents allowed of and established by the Laws, Statutes and Constitutions of this Realm of England within the parish of East Dereham in the said County of Norfolk and Diocese of Norwich or in any other Parish within the said Diocese to which you shall remove with the consent of your Ordinary, you having first before me subscribed and sworn to all things which the law in this case requires to be subscribed and sworn to. And this our licence to endure during our pleasure and your good demeanour but no longer or otherwise. IN TESTIMONY whereof we have caused this Seal which in this behalf we use to be hereunto affixed.

Dated at Norwich the 23rd day of March in the year of Our Lord 1769.

RICHARD MOSS,  
*Deputy Registrar.*

# Appendix II

## A LIST OF DATES

Educational Events	Books dealing with or bearing on Education	Acts, Bills, Official Reports, etc.
1762.	Rousseau, <i>Émile</i> .	
1763.	La Chalotais, <i>Essai d'Éducation Nationale</i> .	
1765.	Priestley, <i>Essay on a Course of Liberal Education</i> .	
1768.	Rolland, <i>Compte Rendu</i> .	
1774.	Adam Smith, <i>Wealth of Nations</i> .	
1776.	[American Independence.]	
1778.	Vicesimus Knox becomes H.M. of Tonbridge School.	
1779.	Protestant Dissenters become legally free to teach.	
1780.	Raikes opens Sunday schools at Gloucester.	
1781.		{ Knox, <i>Liberal Education</i> .
1782.		{ Pestalozzi, <i>Leonard and Gertrude</i> .
1783.		Mme de Genlis, <i>Adèle et Théodore</i> .
1787.		Day, <i>Sandford and Merton</i> .
1789.		Wollstonecraft, <i>Thoughts on the Education of a Daughter</i> .
1790.		Knox, <i>Letter to Lord North</i> .
{ French Revolution begins.]		Burke, <i>Thoughts on the French Revolution</i> .
[Death of John Wesley.]		Paunce, <i>Rights of Man</i> .
		{ Wollstonecraft, <i>Vindication of the Rights of Woman</i> .
		Godwin, <i>Enquiry concerning Political Justice</i> .
[Spenhamland scheme.]		{ Edgeworth, <i>Practical Education</i> .
{ Pestalozzi goes to Stans.		{ Malthus, <i>Essay on Population</i> .
1798. { Butler becomes H.M. of Shrewsbury.		{ Malthus, <i>Essay on Population</i> .



- { Fellenberg starts work at Hofwyl.  
 1799. { Robert Owen goes to New Lanark.  
 Birkbeck starts lectures in Glasgow.  
 { Royal Institution founded.  
 1800. { Oxford Public Examination Statute.  
 1801.  
 1802.
1803. { Pestalozzi goes to Yverdon.  
 1805. { Leeds Grammar School decision.  
 [Abolition of the Slave Trade.]  
 1806.  
 1807.  
 1809.
1810. Royal Lancastrian Assoc. (Brit. and For. Sch.  
 Society) founded.  
 1811. National Society founded.  
 1813.  
 1814.  
 1815. [End of war with France.]  
 1816. Robert Owen's Infant School opened at New  
 Lanark.  
 1819. Hill's School at Hazelwood opened.  
 [Peterloo. The Six Acts.]  
 1820. [Accession of George IV.]  
 1823. Beginnings of Birkbeck College, London.  
 1824.  
 1825. Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge  
 founded.  
 [Stockton and Darlington Railway opened.]  
 1826. David Stow founds Glasgow Infant Sch. Soc.  
 1827. Faraday starts Christmas Lectures at the Royal  
 Institution.
- General Inclosure Act.  
 Health and Morals of Apprentices  
 Act (Peel).
- Parochial Schools Bill (Whitbread).
- Corn Law.
- Factory Act (Peel).
- Parish Schools Bill (Brougham.)
- Combination Laws repealed.
- Lancaster, *Improvements in Education*.  
 Mrs. Trimmer, *Comparative View, etc.*
- Edgeworth, *Essays on Professions  
 Education*.
- Robert Owen, *A New View of Society*.  
 Wordsworth, *L-exursion*.
- Wildespin, *Education of Infant Chil-  
 dren of the Poor*.
- James Mill, "Education" (*Encyc. Brit.*).  
 Brougham, *Practical Observations on  
 the Education of the People*.

<i>Educational Events</i>		<i>Books dealing with or bearing on Education</i>	<i>Acts, Bills, Official Reports, etc.</i>
1828.	{ Death of Pestalozzi. Arnold becomes H.M. of Rugby. 'University of London' founded.		{ Repeal of Test Acts. Catholic Emancipation Act.
1830.	[Accession of William IV.]	Lyell, <i>Principles of Geology</i> .	
1831.	King's College, London, founded.		Reform Act.
1832.	Durham University founded.		{ Factory Act (Shaftesbury). Education Bill (Roebuck). First Education Vote (£20,000)
1833.	{ Beginning of Oxford Movement. [Abolition of Slavery.] Foundation of the British Association for the Advancement of Science.	<i>Tracts for the Times</i> .	Wood's Bill to open Universities to Dissenters.
1834.			Municipal Corporations Act.
1835.			
1836.	{ Kennedy becomes H.M. of Shrewsbury. Home and Colonial Infant Sch. Soc. founded. Glasgow Normal Seminary (Stow) opened.		
1837.	Normal School of Design founded.		
1838.	[Accession of Queen Victoria.] Kay-Shuttleworth opens Training College at Norwood.		
1839.	Committee of Council for Education set up.		Grammar Schools Act.
1840.	Battersea Normal School opened.		
1841.	Cheltenham College founded.		Graham's Factory Bill.
1843.	{ 'Governesses' Benevolent Inst. founded. Marlborough College founded.		
1844.	Y.M.C.A. founded.		
1845.	Royal College of Chemistry founded.	Whewell, <i>Of a Liberal Education in General</i> .	Repeal of the Corn Law.
1846.	Pupil-teacher system introduced.	Hook, <i>On the Means of rendering More Efficient the Education of the People</i> .	

1848. Queen's College, London, founded.  
[Revolution and Reaction in Europe.]
1849. { College of Preceptors incorporated.  
Bedford College, London, founded.
1850. North London Collegiate Sch. founded.
1851. { The Great Exhibition.  
Govt. Sch. of Mines founded.
1852. { Department of Science and Art founded.  
[Charity Commission set up.]
1853. { Thring becomes H.M. of Uppingham.  
C. of P. local exams. instituted Y.W.C.A. founded.  
Cheltenham Ladies' College founded.  
Working Men's College founded.
1854. { First Kindergarten opened in England.  
Oxford Museum founded.  
Education Department created.
1855. [Indian Mutiny.]
1856. { Oxford and Cambridge Locals instituted.  
Dorothea Beale becomes H.M. of Cheltenham  
Ladies' College.
1857. { Medical Register instituted.  
Robert Lowe becomes V.P. of Educ. Dept.  
[Volunteer Movement.]
1859. London Univ. institutes degrees in Science.  
[American Civil War, to 1864.]
1860. The 'Revised Code.'
1861. Report of Newcastle Commission  
(Elementary Education).
1862. Report of Clarendon Commission  
(Public Schools).
1863. T. Hughes, *Tom Brown's Schooldays*.
1864. Newman, *Idea of a University*.  
'Cuthbert Bede,' *The Adventures of  
Mr. Verdant Green*.
1865. W. J. Fox's Education Bill.
1866. Lord John Russell's Borough Bill.
- Oxford University Act.
- Pakington's Education Bill.  
Cambridge University Act.

# *Educational Events*

1867. Non-collegiate students admitted at Oxford.  
1868.

1869. { Cambridge higher local exam. instituted.  
1870. { Beginnings of H.M. Conference.  
N. Union of (Elem.) Teachers founded.  
[Franco-Prussian War.]

1871. G.P.D.S.T. founded.  
1872. { Girton College founded.  
1873. { Beginnings of Univ. Extension movement at  
Cambridge.  
1874. { Froebel Society founded.  
Oxf. and Camb. Joint Board exams. instituted.

1875. Newnham College, Cambridge, founded.  
1876.  
1877. Maria Grey Training College founded.  
1879. { City and Guilds of London Inst. founded.  
Somerville Coll. and Lady Margaret Hall founded.  
London Univ. admits women to degrees.  
1880. { Owens Coll., Manchester, becomes a University.  
Regent St. Polytechnic opened.

1883. { Finsbury Technical College opened.  
Church Schools Company founded.  
Boys' Brigade founded.  
1884. { Toynbee Hall opened.  
Central Technical College opened.

1885. { Cambridge Training College for Women founded.  
Dartford P.T. College for Women founded.  
1887. { Roedean founded.  
P.N.E.U. founded.

# *Books dealing with or bearing on Education*

Mull. *Inaugural Address at St. Andrews*.  
Huxley, *Essay on a Liberal Education*.

{ M. Arnold, *Culture and Anarchy*.  
Kingsley, *Madame How and Lady Why*.

*Acts, Bills, Official Reports, etc.*  
Reform Act.  
Public Schools Act.  
Report of Schools Inquiry Commission (Endowed Schools).  
Endowed Schools Act.  
Education Act (Forster).  
Devonshire Commission appointed.  
University Tests Act.  
Ballot Act.

{ Factory Act.  
Report of Royal Comm. on Oxford  
and Cambridge.

Education Act (Sandon).  
Oxford and Cambridge Act.

Education Act (Mundella).

City Parochial Charities Act.

Report of Royal Comm. on Technical  
Instruction.

1888. { Beginning of 'University Day Training Colleges,'  
'Whisky Money' becomes available for Technical Education.
1890. {
1893. Federal University of Wales formed.
1894. {
1895. { London School of Economics founded.  
Morant goes to the Board of Education.
1896. { Royal College of Art established.  
Wycombe Abbey School founded.
1897. {
1898. {
1899. Ruskin College, Oxford, opened.  
[Boer War, to 1902.]
1900. { Block Grant system introduced.  
Cockerton Judgment.  
Mason Coll., Birmingham, becomes a University.  
[Accession of Edward VII]
1901. Borstal System started.
1902. { W.E.A. founded.  
Victoria Univ. gives place to separate Univs. of  
Manchester, Liverpool, and Leeds.  
Common Entrance examination instituted.
1903. {
1904. {
1905. Univ. Coll., Sheffield, becomes a University.
1906. {
- { Local Government Act.  
{ Report of Cross Commission.
- Elem. Educ. (Blind and Deaf Children) Act.  
Report of Griesham Committee.  
Report of Bryce Commission.  
Gosset's Education Bill.
- { University of London Act.  
{ Teachers' Registration Bill.  
Board of Education Act.
- Education Act (Halfpenny).
- Education (Local Authorities' Default) Act.  
*Suggestion to Teachers* first issued.  
Education (Provision of Meals) Act.  
Burdell's Education Bill.  
Hallane Commn.'s Report on Tech. Education.

Adams, *Herbartian Psychology applied to Education*

Dewey, *The School and Society*.

*Educational Events*

1907. { Imperial College of Science established.  
'Free-place' system started.  
Teachers' Registration Council established.  
Medical Branch of Board of Educ. established.
1908. { Boy Scouts founded.  
The Bnet-Simon Scale.
1909. Univ. Coll., Bristol, becomes a University.
1910. Girl Guides founded. [Accession of George V.]
1911. University Grants Committee set up.
1912. Regulations for Junior Technical Schools first issued.
1913. Rachel McMillan opens Nursery Sch. at Deptford.  
[First World War, to 1918.]
1914. Women's Institutes started.
1915. Play Centres Association founded.
1916. Secondary Schools Examination Council set up.
1917. The 'Stanford Revision' test (Terman).
- 1918.
- 1919.
1920. { Oxford University admits women to degrees.  
State Scholarships instituted.
1921. { The 'Geddes Axe.'  
National Council of Labour Colleges founded.  
Stowe and Canford founded.
1923. { Nursery School Association formed.
1924. { Regulations for Adult Education first issued.
1925. { National Playing Fields Association founded.
1926. { Univ. Coll., Reading, becomes a University.  
Joint Examining Boards for training of teachers  
instituted.

*Acts, Bills, Official Reports, etc.*  
Education (Administrative Provisions) Act.

{ McKenna's Education Bill.  
Children Act.  
Prevention of Crimes Act.

Montessori, *Method*.

Report of Royal Comm. on London University.

Dewey, *Democracy and Education*.

{ Education Act (Fisher).  
Teachers Superannuation Act.  
Burnham Committee set up.

Nunn, *Education—its Data and First Principles*.

Education—Consolidating Act.

Teachers Superannuation Act.  
Hadow Report—*The Education of the Adolescent*.  
University of London Act.

1928. First Cambridgeshire Village College opened.
- 1929.
- 1930.
- 1931.
1932. 'Free places' become 'Special places.'
- 1933.
1934. [Hitler establishes the Third Reich.]
1936. [Accession of George VI.]
1937. National Fitness Council.
1938. [Munich Conference.]
1939. [Second World War, to 1945.]
1940. ['Battle of Britain.']
1941. { A.T.C. formed,  
Boys and girls of 16-18 required to register.
1942. National Youth Advisory Council formed.
- 1943.
- 1944.
- Adams : *The Evolution of Educational Theory*.
- B. of E. Pamphlet—*The New Prospect in Education*.
- Report of Mental Deficiency Committee.
- Unemployment Insurance Act.
- Hadow Report on the Primary School.
- { Children and Young Persons Act,  
Hadow Report on Infant and Nursery Schools,  
Unemployment Act,  
Education Act.
- Spens Report.
- B. of E. Circular 1486 on Youth Service.
- B. of E. Circular 1516—*The Challenge of Youth*.
- The 'Green Book.'
- { B. of E. White Paper on *Educational Reconstruction*,  
Norwood Report,  
Education Act (Butler),  
Final Report of Fleming Committee,  
McNair Report.

### Appendix III

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

THE following is a list of books which are quoted or to which reference is made in the text. Acts of Parliament and Reports of Commissions or Committees, which are mentioned in the list of dates (Appendix II), are not included in this Bibliography.

Adams, Sir John, *The Herbartian Psychology applied to Education* (1897).

*Exposition and Illustration in Teaching* (1909).

*The New Teaching* (1918).

*Modern Developments in Educational Practice* (1922).

*Errors in School* (1927).

Adamson, J. W., *English Education, 1760-1902* (1930).

Allen, B. M., *Sir Robert Morant* (1934).

Archer, R. L., *Secondary Education in the Nineteenth Century* (1921).

Arnold, Matthew, *Rugby Chapel* (1857).

*Popular Education in France* (1861).

*A French Eton* (1864).

*Higher Education and Universities in Germany* (1868).

*Culture and Anarchy* (1869).

*Reports on Elementary Schools, 1852-1882*—ed. Marvin (1908).

Austen, Jane, *Emma* (1816).

Barnard, H. C., *The French Tradition in Education* (1922).

Bazeley, E. T., *Homer Lane and the Little Commonwealth* (1928).

'Bede, Cuthbert,' *The Adventures of Mr. Verdant Green* (1853).

Bell, Valentine, *Junior Instruction Centres and their Future* (1934).

Bellot, H. H., *University College, London, 1826-1926* (1929).

Binns, H. B., *A Century of Education* (1908).

Birchenough, C., *A History of Elementary Education in England and Wales* (1929).

Blewitt, T. (ed.), *The Modern Schools Handbook* (1934).



- Brasenose Quatercentenary Monographs* (1909).  
 Brodrick, G. C., *History of the University of Oxford* (1886).  
 Brontë, Charlotte, *Jane Eyre* (1847).  
 Brougham, Henry, *Observations on the Education of the People* (1825).  
 Browning, E. B., *Aurora Leigh* (1857).  
 Burke, Edmund, *Thoughts and Details on Scarcity* (in *Works*, vol. vii, 1826).  
 Burns, C. Delisle, *A Short History of Birkbeck College* (1924).  
 Burt, Cyril, *The Young Delinquent* (1925).  
                     *The Backward Child* (1937).  
 Butler, Joseph, *The Analogy of Religion* (1736).  
 Butler, Samuel, *Life and Letters* (1896).  
  
 Campagnac, E. T., *Society and Solitude* (1922).  
 Childs, W. M., *Making a University* (1933).  
 Clarke, Sir Fred., *Education and Social Change* (1940).  
 Corston, W., *Life of Lancaster* (1840).  
 Crabbe, G., *The Borough* (1810).  
 Cunningham, W., *The Growth of English Industry and Commerce* (1907).  
  
 Darwin, Charles, *Origin of Species* (1859).  
 Davies, J. L., *The Working Men's College, 1854-1904* (1904).  
 Day, Thomas, *Sandford and Merton* (1783).  
 Dent, H. C., *The Education Act, 1944* (1944).  
 Dewey, John, *The School and Society* (1900).  
                     *Democracy and Education* (1916).  
 Dicey, A. V., *Law and Opinion in England* (1905).  
 Dickens, Charles, *Sketches by Boz* (1836).  
 Duncan, J., *The Education of the Ordinary Child* (1942).  
  
 Edgeworth, R. L., *Practical Education* (1798).  
                     *Essays on Professional Education* (1809).  
*Encyclopédie* (1751-65).  
*Essays and Reviews* (1860).  
 Evennett, H. O., *The Catholic Schools of England and Wales* (1944).

Faraday, Michael, *The Chemical History of a Candle* (1861).

*On the Various Forces of Matter* (1860).

(In the second edition (1873) the title of this book was changed to *On the Various Forces of Nature*.)

Fiddes, E., *Owens College and Manchester University* (1937).

Findlay, J. J., *Arnold of Rugby* (1897).

Fletcher, Sir Frank, *After Many Days* (1937).

Flexner, Abraham, *Universities* (1930).

Froebel, F., *The Education of Man* (1826).

Galton, Sir Francis, *Enquiries into Human Faculty* (1883).

Genlis, Mme de., *Adèle et Théodore* (1782).

George, W. R., *The Junior Republic* (1911).

Godwin, William, *Enquiry concerning Political Justice* (1796).

Gray, Thomas, *Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College* (1748).

Green, J. A., *The Educational Ideas of Pestalozzi* (1905).

Green, T. R., *A Short History of the English People* (1874).

*Hansard, Parliamentary Debates.*

Hearnshaw, F., *Centenary History of King's College, London* (1929).

(ed.) *Social and Political Ideas of the Age of Reaction and Reconstruction* (1932).

Hicks, W. C. R., *Lady Barn House and the Work of W. H. Herford* (1936).

Hogg, E. M., *Quintin Hogg* (1906).

Hook, W. F., *On the Means of rendering efficient the Education of the People* (1846).

Horrabin, J. F. and W., *Working Class Education* (1924).

How, F. D., *Six Great Schoolmasters* (1904).

Hudson, J. W., *History of Adult Education* (1850).

Hughes, T., *Tom Brown's Schooldays* (1856).

Huxley, T. H., *Collected Essays* (1906).

Jones, M. G., *The Charity School Movement* (1938).

Kennedy, B. H., *Public School Latin Primer* (1866).

Kingsley, Charles, *Alton Locke* (1850).

*Water Babies* (1863).

*Madame How and Lady Why* (1869).

*Life and Letters* (1890).

Kitchen, P. L., *From Learning to Earning* (1944).

Knox, Vicesimus, *Essays* (1778-9).

*Liberal Education* (1781).

*Letter to Lord North* (1789).

La Chalotais, Louis-René de Caradeuc de, *Essai d'Éducation Nationale* (1763).

Lancaster, Joseph, *Improvements in Education* (1803).

Leach, A. F., *Educational Charters* (1911).

*Schools of Mediæval England* (1915).

Livingstone, Sir Richard, *The Future in Education* (1941).

Locke, John, *On Education* (1692-3).

Lowndes, G. A., *The Silent Social Revolution* (1937).

Lyell, Sir Charles, *Principles of Geology* (1830).

Lyte, H. C. Maxwell, *A History of Eton College* (1875).

Magnus, Laurie, *Jubilee Book of the Girls' Public Day School Trust* (1923).

*Making Citizens* (H.M.S.O., 1945).

Malthus, T. R., *Essay on Population* (1798).

Mangnall, Richmall, *Questions* (1800).

Marvin, F., *The Century of Hope* (1919).

Maurice, F. D., *Introductory Lecture on the Objects and Methods of Queen's College* (1848).

*Lectures to Ladies on Practical Subjects* (1856).

Mayer, Sir Robert, *Young People in Trouble* (1945).

Mill, James, "Education"—article in *Encyclopædia Britannica* (1825).

Mill, J. S., *Utilitarianism* (1853).

*On Liberty* (1859).

*Inaugural Address at St. Andrews* (1867).

*Autobiography* (1873).

Montesquieu, *Œuvres* (Laboulaye edition, 1875-9).

Montmorency, J. E. G. de, *State Intervention in English Education* (1902).

Napleton, John, *Considerations on the Exercises for the First and Second Degrees of the University of Oxford* (1773).

Newman, J. H., *Idea of a University* (1852).

*Apologia pro vita sua* (1864).

Norwood, C., & Hope, A. H., *The Higher Education of Boys in England* (1909).

Nunn, Sir T. Percy, *Education : its Data and First Principles* (1920).  
Revised Edition 1945.

Owen, Robert, *A New View of Society* (1816).

*Life of Robert Owen* (1857).

Padley, R., and Cole, M., *Evacuation Survey* (1940).

Paine, T., *Rights of Man* (1791).

Parkin, G. R., *Life and Letters of Edward Thring* (1904).

Pattison, Mark, *Suggestions on Academical Organisation* (1868).

*Memoirs* (1885).

Percival, A. C., *The English Mss* (1939).

Pestalozzi, J. H., *Leonard and Gertrude* (1781).

*How Gertrude teaches her Children* (1801).

Plato, *Republic*.

Priestley, Joseph, *Rudiments of English Grammar* (1761).

*Essay on a Course of Liberal Education* (1765).

*Observations relating to Education* (1778).

*Prisons and Borstals* (H.M.S.O., 1945).

*Psychological Tests of Educational Capacity*: B. of E. Pamphlet (1924).

Quick, *Educational Reformers* (1868).

Quintilian, *Institutiones Oratoriæ*.

Raikes, E., *Dorothea Beale of Cheltenham* (1908).

Raymont, T., *The Principles of Education* (1907).

Rogers, A.M.A.H., *Degrees by Degrees* (1938).

- Rolland d'Erceville, *Compte Rendu* (1768).  
Rouse, W. H. D., *A History of Rugby School* (1898).  
Rousseau, J. J., *Emile* (1762).  
Ruskin, John, *The Seven Lamps of Architecture* (1849).  
    *The Stones of Venice* (1851-3).  
    *Unto this Last* (1860).  
    *Sesame and Lilies* (1865).  
    *Time and Tide* (1867).
- Salmon, D., *Joseph Lancaster* (1904).  
Schonell, F., *Backwardness in the Basic Subjects* (1942).  
Shenstone, W., *The School* (1742).  
Simpson, J. H., *Same Schooling* (1936).  
Smith, Adam, *Wealth of Nations* (1776).  
Smith, Frank, *Life of Sir James Kay-Shuttleworth* (1923).  
    *A History of English Elementary Education* (1931).  
Smith, Sydney, *Essays* (Edinburgh Review articles, 1802-27).  
Smith, W. O. Lester, *To Whom do Schools Belong?* (1942).  
Stanley, A. P., *Life of Arnold* (1844).  
Storr, F., *Life and Remains of the Rev. R. H. Quick* (1899).  
Stow, David, *The Training System* (1836).  
Strachey, Lytton, *Eminent Victorians* (1924).  
*Suggestions for Teachers*, B. of E. Handbook (1905 ff.).
- Tawney, R. H., *Secondary Education for All* (1924).  
Thackeray, W. M., *Vanity Fair* (1847).  
Thomas, M. W., *Young People in Industry* (1945).  
Thompson, W. D'Arcy, *Daydreams of a Schoolmaster* (1864).  
Thring, Edward, *Education and School* (1864).  
    *Theory and Practice of Teaching* (1883).  
Trevelyan, G. M., *British History in the Nineteenth Century* (1922).  
Trilling, L., *Matthew Arnold* (1939).  
Trimmer, Sarah, *Reflections on the Education of Children in Charity Schools* (1792).  
    *A Comparative View of the New Plan of Education promulgated by Mr. Joseph Lancaster* (1805).

'Truscott, Bruce,' *Redbrick University* (1943).

Tuckwell, W., *Reminiscences of Oxford* (1900).

Whewell, W., *On the Principles of English University Education* (1837).

*Of a Liberal Education in General* (1845).

Wilderspin, Samuel, *Importance of Educating the Infant Children of the Poor* (1823).

*The Infant System* (1840).

*A Manual for the Religious and Moral Instruction of Young Children* (1845).

Wilson, J. Dover (ed.), *The Schools of England* (1928).

Wollstonecraft, Mary, *Thoughts on the Education of a Daughter* (1787).

*Vindication of the Rights of Women* (1792).

Wordsworth, William, *The Excursion* (1814).

*The Prelude* (1850).

Young, Arthur, *Annals of Agriculture* (1784-1808).

Zimmern, Alice, *The Renaissance of Girls' Education* (1898).

# INDEX

- Academies, nonconformist, 31-6  
 Accomplishments, 25-6, 183, 190  
 Acts of Parliament, quoted or referred to:  
   Board of Education, 224, 240  
   Cambridge University, 142  
   Children (1908 and 1933), 332  
   City Parochial Charities, 211  
   Education (1870), 134-8, 177, 191, 196, 235, 359; (1876), 198; (1880), 198; (1902), 223, 245-7, 250-6; (1918), 263, 269, 271-6, 350; (1936), 279-80; (1944), 327, 346-57, 370  
   Education (Administrative Provisions, 1907), 262, 266; (Choice of Employment), 329; (Local Authorities Default), 250; (Provision of Meals), 268  
   Elementary Education (Blind and Deaf Children), 261  
   Enclosure, xiii-xiv  
   Endowed Schools, 17, 134, 171, 191, 234  
   Factory (1802), xvi, 75-6; (1819), 77; (1844), 133, 197; (1874), 197  
   General Enclosure, xiii  
   Grammar Schools, 19  
   Health and Morals of Apprentices, 75-6  
   Local Government, 209  
   Oxford and Cambridge, 228  
   Oxford University, 142  
   Prevention of Crime, 334  
   Public Schools (1868), 148  
   Reform (1833), 80, 134; (1867), 134, 138, 172  
   Teachers' Superannuation (1918 and 1925), 302-3  
   Technical Instruction, 209, 247  
   To prevent growth of schism, 32  
   Unemployment Insurance, 331  
   Uniformity, 32, 33  
   University of London, 231  
 Adams, Sir John, 259, 360, 361  
 Adamson, J. W., 19, 108, 203, 220, 239  
*Adèle et Théodore*, 26  
 "Administrative muddle," 239, 247  
 Adult education, 105-7, 323-8  
 Advanced courses, 313  
 Advisory councils (Ministry of Education), 346  
 Age, school-leaving, 272-3, 279, 344, 350  
 Agreed syllabus, 280, 350  
 Agriculture, 231, 233, 281  
 Aided schools, 248  
 Air Training Corps, 338  
 "Almighty Wall," 179  
 Ambleside "House of Education," 289  
 Ampleforth College, 289  
 Anderson, John, 105  
*Anschauung*, 45, 201  
*Apologia pro Vita Sua*, 139  
 Apperception, 360  
 "Appointed day," 273, 351  
 Apprentices, 75, 76, 322  
 Approved schools, 290, 333  
 Archer, R. L., 96, 145, 177, 226, 358  
 Arithmetic, 19, 72  
 Armstrong (King's) College, Newcastle, 233  
 Arnold, Matthew, 93, 131, 149, 170-2, 177, 216, 236, 358  
 Arnold, Thomas, 17, 88-95, 102, 134  
 Art, teaching of, 157-8, 173-5, 320, 323  
 Assistant Masters' Association, 226, 259  
 "Associate in Arts," 155 n.  
 Associated schools, 285  
 Association for Education of Women, 187  
 Association of Preparatory Schools, 281  
*Aurora Leigh*, 183 n.  
 Austen, Jane, 26  
*Autobiography* (J. S. Mill), 169  
 Baden-Powell, Lord, 335  
 Bagley, W. C., 362  
 Baldwin, Stanley, 283  
 Balfour, A. J., 245, 250  
 Ball-frame, 72  
 "Barbarians," 171  
 Barker, Sir Ernest, 326  
 Barnett, Canon, 214  
 Battersea Normal School, 118-9  
 Beale, Dorothea, 188-9, 193, 222, 226  
 Beaumont College, 289  
 Bedales, 194  
 Bede College, Durham, 297  
 Bedford College, London, 185, 231  
 Bell, Andrew, 63-4, 66, 67, 68, 222  
 Bell, Valentine, 332  
 Benedictines, 289

- Bentham, Jeremy, 84, 358  
 Biber, E., 164  
 Bible reading, 7, 10, 12, 57  
 Binet, A., 362, 363  
 Binet-Simon scale, 363  
 Bingley Training College, 296  
 Birchenough, C., 63 *n.*, 274  
 Birkbeck, G., 100, 105-6  
 Birkbeck College, 109, 212  
 Birmingham and Midland Institute, 212  
 Birmingham University, 232  
 Birrell, Augustine, 251  
 "Black list," 252-3  
 Blake, William, 7  
 Block grant, 252  
 Bloomsbury, 295  
 Board of Education, 240, 244, 259, 346  
 Board of Trade, 157, 158  
 Board schools, 136-8, 196-200, 204-5, 246  
 Boarding schools, 16, 283, 286, 348  
 Boat race, University, 145  
 Boer War, 245, 262  
 Borough Bill, 125  
 Borough Road school, 63-4  
 Borough Road training college, 67, 119  
 Borstal, 334  
 Boy Scouts, 335  
 Boys' Brigade, 335  
 Bradford Grammar School, 191  
 Bradford L.E.A., 364  
 Bristol University, 232, 292  
 British and Foreign School Society, 67-8, 79, 83, 117  
 Brontë, Charlotte, 182  
 Brougham, Henry, 44, 67, 71, 77-9, 99, 100, 102, 106  
 Brown, Ford Madox, 176  
 Browning, E. B., 183 *n.*  
 Bryant, Sophie, 221  
 Bryce Commission, 238, 239-43  
 Buckland, William, 109  
 Building programme, 356  
 Bullying, 22, 91  
 Burke, Edmund, xvii, 5, 19, 54  
 Burnham scales, 301-2, 319  
 Burt, Cyril, 311-12, 363, 364  
 "Business," 18, 19  
 Buss, F. M., 188-9, 222, 226  
 Butler, Bishop, xiii *n.*, 33  
 Butler, R. A., 284, 298, 343-6  
 Butler, Samuel, 21, 85-7  
 Cadet corps, 337  
 Cambridge University, 28, 30-1, 36, 97, 142-3, 185, 213, 220, 222, 228-9, 292-4  
 Cambridgeshire village colleges, 328  
 Campagnac, E. T., 361, 366-7  
 Campbell, Thomas, 99  
 Camps, school, 272  
 Canford, 283  
 Caput, 143  
 Careers masters, 329  
 Carlyle, Thomas, 85  
 Casa dei Bambini, 267  
 Catholic Emancipation, 80  
 Cattell, J. McK., 362  
 Cavendish laboratories, 294  
 Central schools, 276  
 Central Society for Education, 114  
 Central Technical College, 208, 231, 323  
 Central Training Council, 299  
 Certificate, teachers', 296-7  
*Challenge of Youth*, 336  
 Charity Commission, 149, 152, 239  
 Charity schools, 5-8, 32  
 Charterhouse, 147, 284  
 Chartism, 120, 175  
 Cheltenham College, 93, 149  
 Cheltenham Ladies' College, 188-9, 222  
 Child labour, xv, xvi, 9, 11-12, 74, 272  
 Children's Happy Evenings Association, 266  
 Children's House, 267  
*Chrestomathia*, 79 *n.*  
 Christian Brothers, 290  
 Christian socialism, 175, 176  
 Christ's Hospital, 40, 191, 287  
 Church of England, xiii, 56, 58, 115; and elementary education, 7, 65, 67, 78, 121, 125-6, 279; and secondary education, 16-17, 95, 193; and university education, 31-2, 98, 100-2, 229; and training colleges, 219  
 Church Schools Company, 193  
 "Churnside," 286  
 Circulating schools (Wales), 12-13  
 Citizenship, education for, 161, 366-71  
 City and Guilds of London Institute, 208, 210, 211, 323  
 City Companies (London), 14, 208  
 City Parochial Charities Act, 211  
 Clarendon Commission, 146-9  
 Clarke, Sir Fred, 277 *n.*, 361, 369-71  
 Class distinctions and national education, 5, 53, 58-9, 65, 353-4, 370  
 Classics, the, 17-20, 40, 88, 92, 97, 112, 146, 148, 151, 166, 258  
 Claydon, W. A., 287  
 Clergy Daughters' School, 182, 188  
 Cleveland, Duke of, 228  
 Clifford, Dr. J., 250  
 Clough, A. J., 185-6, 212



Clubs, youth, 335-7  
 Cockerton judgment, 244  
 "Cockney College," 100  
 Co-education, 193-4  
 Coleg Harlech, 325  
 Collectivism, 358, 370  
 College attendance order, 351  
 Combined system, 120, 124  
 Comenius, 39  
 Commissions.  
     Bryce, 238  
     Clarendon, 146-9  
     Cross, 203-6, 209, 213, 217, 236 *n.*  
     Devonshire, 207  
     Gresham, 231  
     Newcastle, 126-8, 170, 216  
     Oxford and Cambridge (1852), 142;  
         (Cleveland, 1874), 228  
     Schools Inquiry (Taunton), 149-54,  
         170-1, 180, 209, 224, 225, 243  
     Selborne, 231  
     Technical Instruction, 208-9  
 Committee of Privy Council on Educa-  
     tion, 115, 122, 125  
 Common day schools, 4-5  
 Common entrance examination, 281  
 Common Prayer, Book of, 16  
 Community centres, 326-8  
 Comprehensive system, 120  
*Compte rendu* (Rolland), 51  
 Compulsory school attendance, 128,  
     196-9, 342  
 Conscription, 338  
 Consultative Committee, 240, 274-8,  
     304  
 Continuative education, 273, 323-8  
 Controlled schools, 349  
 Coplestone, E., 96  
 Correlation, 362-3  
 County colleges, 327  
 County councils, 209, 237, 245-6  
 County school (before 1902), 150; (after  
     1902), 255, 349  
 Cowper, William, 58  
 Cowper-Temple clause, 136-7, 166, 204,  
     243, 246  
 Crabbe, George, 3, 4  
 Crimean War, 127  
 Cross Commission, 203-6, 209, 213,  
     217, 236 *n.*  
*Culture and Anarchy*, 171-2, 358  
 Curriculum:  
     Approved schools, 333  
     Charity schools, 6  
     Elementary schools, 124, 166  
     Girls' schools, 25  
     Grammar schools, 17-20, 151, 169-70  
     Junior technical schools, 319

Curriculum—*contd.*  
     Nonconformist academies, 34-5  
     Private schools, 23-4  
     Public schools, 87, 92, 148, 178-9  
     Schools of industry, 9  
     Secondary schools, 255, 257-9, 305,  
         312-15  
     Sunday schools, 10-11  
     Training colleges, 116, 118, 216  
  
 Dame schools, 2-3, 78  
 Dartford Physical Training College, 265  
 Darwin, Charles, 159, 358  
 Davies, Emily, 185-6, 189  
 Davy, Sir Humphry, 109, 111, 157  
 Day continuation schools, 273, 322,  
     327, 351  
 Day, Thomas, 48  
 Day training colleges (university),  
     206, 295, 361  
 Degrees, 29, 31, 97; external, 103, 231,  
     295, 322; internal, 231; pass, 97,  
     141; in science, 112, 233, 294; for  
     women, 187  
 Delinquency, juvenile, 332  
 Democracy and the educational system,  
     283-4, 286, 368-9  
 Denison, Archdeacon, 119  
 Dent, H. C., 346, 357  
 Development plans, 347  
 Dewey, John, 367-8  
 Dicey, A. V., xii, 143 *n.*, 352, 358 *n.*, 359  
 Dickens, Charles, 6, 23  
 Dickinson, C. Lowes, 176  
 Diderot, 49  
 Diploma in education, 221-2, 360-1  
 Direct-grant schools, 285, 349, 353  
 Divisional executives, 347  
 "Dotheboys Hall," 23  
 Douai, 289  
 Downside, 289  
 D'Oyly, Dr., 100  
 Drever, James, 365 *n.*  
 Dual system, 137, 251-2, 279, 345, 348-  
     50  
 Dublin University, 187  
 Dulwich College, 191  
 Durham Univ., 144, 230, 233, 247  
  
 Ebbinghaus, H., 362  
 Economics, London School of, 231  
 Ede, Chuter, 344  
 Edgworth, R. L. and Maria, 48  
*Edinburgh Review*, 20, 66, 141  
 Edinburgh University, 222

## Education:

- Continuative, 273, 323-8
- Elementary, 2-13, 113-16, 124-38, 196-201, 204-6, 253, 277, 344, 347, 352
- Part-time, 273, 344
- Primary, 347, 349, 350
- Secondary, 14-27, 84-5, 145-56, 178-81, 218, 236-8, 239-44, 247, 344, 352
- Technical, 104-10, 157-8, 161, 207-12, 233-4, 237, 247, 276-7, 306, 318-23
- University, 28-31, 96-103, 139-45, 228-34
- Vocational, 99, 207-12, 318-23
- Education and Social Change*, 369-71
- Education as a university subject, 222-3, 360-1
- Education Department, 126
- Education its Data and First Principles*, 365-6
- 'Education-mad' party, 106, 114
- Educational history, xi
- "Educational ladder," 155, 166, 241
- Educational Reconstruction* (White Paper), 344
- Elementary education, 2-13, 113-116, 124-38, 196-201, 204-6, 253, 277, 344, 347, 352
- 'Eleven plus,' 277, 321
- Emergency training courses, 356
- Émile*, 40-44, 163
- Eminent Victorians*, 93
- Emma*, 26
- Employment of children, xv, xvi, 9, 11-12, 74, 272
- Enclosure Acts, xiii-xiv
- Encyclopédie*, 49-50
- Endowed schools, 14-23, 149-55, 182; Act, 17, 134, 171, 191, 234
- Engineering, 104, 208
- "Enlightenment," the, 49
- Enquiries into Human Faculty*, 362
- Enquiry concerning Political Justice*, 55
- Essai d'Éducation Nationale*, 50
- Essay on Population*, 55-6
- Essays and Reviews*, 141
- Eton College, 14, 20-1, 22, 63, 91, 147, 178
- Euclid, 151, 258
- Evacuation, 340-1
- Evangelicalism, 58-9
- Evening classes, 70, 105, 210, 211-12, 232, 321
- Evening institutes, 321-2
- Examinations:
  - Elementary schools, 128, 130-1, 199-200

Examinations—*contd.*

- Secondary schools (entrance), 281, 309-10, 344, 364; (leaving), 154, 226, 241, 278, 305, 312-16
- University, 28-9, 31, 96-7
- Excursion*, 52
- Exeter, University College, 213, 233, 292
- Expenses, university, 96, 100, 144, 230
- Extension, university, 187, 212-13, 324
- External degrees, 103, 231, 295, 322
- Factory Acts (1802) xvi, 75-6; (1819), 77; (1844), 133, 197; (1874), 197
- Faraday, Michael, 102, 109, 111, 112
- Fees (elementary schools), 4, 78, 128, 136, 137, 198-9, 241; (secondary schools), 19, 256, 285, 304, 351, 353; (junior technical schools), 319, 320-1
- Fellenberg, P. E. von, 46-7, 70, 116
- Fellowships, university, 143, 228
- Ferens, T. R., 294
- Fights, 22
- Findlay, J. J., 361
- Finsbury Technical College, 208
- Firth College, Sheffield, 232
- Fisher Act, 263, 269, 271-6, 350
- "Five Steps," the, 360
- Fleming Report, 284-8, 353
- Fletcher, Sir Frank, 284
- Flexner, A., 295 *n.*, 300-1
- Formal Training, 17-18, 169
- Forster, W. E., 134-5, 170
- Fox, Charles, 361, 365 *n.*
- Fox, W. J., 124-5
- Francke, A. H., 8
- Free places, 256-7
- French influence on English education, 27, 81, 49-52, 55, 170, 172
- Frensham Heights, 194, 290
- Froebel, F., 201-3, 266
- Froebel Society, 202
- Galton, Sir Francis, 362
- Games, 21, 71-2, 145, 164, 179, 265-6
- Geddes, Sir Eric, 274
- General ability, theory of, 312, 363
- Genlis, Mme de, 26
- Gentleman's Magazine*, 10
- Geology, 109-10
- Geography, 86, 259
- George, W. R., 334 *n.*
- Germany, education in, 148, 170, 172, 318, 368, 378
- 'Gerund-grinding,' 85, 166, 258
- Gibbon, Edward, 30

- Giddy, Davies, 65-6  
 Gifts, Froebelian, 202, 267  
 Girl Guides, 335  
 Girls and women, education of (school), 25-7, 153, 155, 165; (university), 180, 182-94; (Rousseau), 43-4  
 Girls' Public Day School Trust, 192-3, 202, 222, 238, 272  
 Girton College, 185-6  
 Gladstone, W. E., 19, 22 *ff.*, 31, 134  
 Godwin, William, 55  
 Goldsmiths' College, 297  
 Gorst, Sir John, 243  
 Governesses, 25, 183-4  
 Governing bodies, 350  
 Graham, Sir James, 120, 133  
 Grammar, learning of, 40, 85, 86, 166, 258  
 'Grammar,' meaning of term, 14, 17, 87  
 Grammar schools, 14-23, 84, 242, 255, 275-6, 304-5, 354  
 Grammar Schools Act, 19  
 Grants, government, for education (elementary schools), 82, 114, 123, 127, 130, 198, 200, 250, 252, 279; (health services), 264, 266; (secondary schools), 234; (science and technology), 157, 158, 211, (training colleges), 119, 122, 296; (universities), 233, 292-3  
 Gray, Thomas, 21  
 Great Exhibition, 146, 157, 207  
 Greek, compulsory, 294  
 'Green Book,' 343-4  
 Green, J. R., 11  
 Gresham Commission, 231  
 Grey, Maria, 192, 202, 222  
 Grote, George, 100  
 Group tests, 363-4  
 Hadow Report (Infant and Nursery Schools), 269; (Education of the Adolescent), 275-8, 304, 307, 344  
 Haldane, Lord, 294, 323  
 Halévy, Professor, 10  
 Halls of residence, university, 144, 234  
 Hamilton, Sir William, 143  
 Handwork, educational value of, 173, 178  
 Harrow School, 15, 147, 283  
 Hatfield Hall, Durham, 144  
 Hawtrey, Freda, 269  
 Hazelwood School, 24-5  
 Headmasters' Conference, 180, 226  
 Health and Morals of Apprentices Act, 75  
 Hebdomadal Board, 143, 187  
 Hebrew, 17, 33  
 Hegelianism, 365  
 Helvétius, C. A., 69  
 Herbart, J. F., 360  
 Herbertson, A. J., 259  
 Herford, W. H., 193  
 Heurism, 42  
 Higher Certificate, 312, 315  
 Higher Grade Schools, 205, 223, 235-8, 240, 255  
 Higher local examination, 185, 186  
 'Higher tops,' 235, 237  
 Hill, T. W., 24-5  
 History, 86, 92, 161-2, 259  
 Hofwyl, 46-7, 70-1, 116  
 Hogg, Quintin, 210-11  
 Home and Colonial Infant School Society, 71  
 Honours Schools (Oxford), 31, 96-7, 112, 228, 294  
 Hook, Dr. W. F., 124  
 Hook, Theodore, 100  
 House system, 282  
*How Gertrude teaches her Children*, 45  
 Howson, G. W. S., 259  
 Hughes, Tom, 175, 176  
 Hull, University College, 233, 292  
 Hullah, John, 176  
 Hume, David, 99, 100  
 Hurstpierpoint College, 150  
 Huxley, Thomas, 133, 159, 165-7, 358  
 Hygiene and health, 174, 177, 181, 261-6, 272  
*Idea of a University*, 139-41, 358  
*Illustrated London News*, 146  
 Imperial College of Science and Technology, 323  
*Improvements in Education*, 64  
*Inaugural Address* (J. S. Mill), 169-70  
 Independent schools, 226, 280-91, 351, 353, 354, 356, 370  
 Individual and society, 361, 365-71  
 Individualism, xvii, 106, 156, 165, 172, 358, 368  
 Industrial Revolution, xiii, xv-xvi, 53, 104, 107, 115  
 Industry, schools of, 8-10  
 Infant schools, 70-3, 203  
*Infant System*, 72  
 Inspectors, 117, 122, 128, 131, 154, 170, 241, 254  
 Intelligence quotient, 261, 263  
 Internal degrees, 231  
 James, William, 365 *ff.*  
 Jesuits, 30, 289  
 Joint Examining Boards, 297, 300  
 Jones, M. G., 6

- Payne, Joseph, 221  
 Peel, Sir Robert (elder), 75, 77;  
     (younger), 19, 31  
 People's High Schools (Denmark),  
     325-6  
 Pestalozzi, J. H., 44-6, 70, 71, 163, 201  
 'Philistines', 171  
 Philosophy, educational, 361  
 Physical education, 71-2, 164-5, 174,  
     179, 262-6, 272  
 Pietism, 8  
 Pitt, William, 9, 19  
 Plato, 139, 174, 360, 371  
 Play, educational value of, 71-2, 164,  
     179, 201-2, 265-6  
 Play centres, 266  
 Playgrounds and playing-fields, 71-2,  
     265-6, 336  
 Plebs League, 325  
 Plumptre, Henry, 39  
 Polytechnics, 210-11  
 Poor relief, xiv, 8, 9  
 Population, xv-xvi, 55-6  
*Practical Education*, 48  
*Practical Observations on the Education of  
   the People*, 79-80, 106  
 Preceptors, College of, 154, 155, 221-2,  
     224, 314  
 Prefects, 62, 86, 91  
 Preparatory schools, 281-2, 370  
 Pre-service organisations, 338  
 Priestley, Joseph, 34-6, 109  
 Primary schools, 275, 347, 350  
 Private schools, 23-7, 182-3, 193,  
     288-9, 351, 370  
 Probation, 333  
 Professional associations, 225-7  
*Professional Education*, 48  
 Professorships, university, 31, 141, 144,  
     221, 229, (of education), 252, 361  
 Progressive education, 41, 45, 201-2  
 'Progressive' schools, 24-5, 194 n., 290  
 Proprietary schools, 149-50  
 Protestantism, 10, 57  
 Provided schools, 246, 247, 252, 349  
 Prussia, education in, 81, 128, 137-8  
 Psychology and education, 359-60,  
     362-4  
 Public Examination Statute, 31, 96  
 Public schools, 14-23, 84-95, 147-9,  
     281-8, 370  
 Public Schools Act, 148  
 Public Schools Commission, 88  
*Punch*, 22, 172 n.  
 Punishments, 20, 25, 164  
 Pupil teacher centres, 217, 223, 255  
 Pupil teachers, 122, 126, 132, 200, 215-  
     18  
*Quarterly Journal of Education*, 91  
*Quarterly Review*, 66, 87  
 Queen's College, London, 184, 188  
 Queen's scholarships, 122, 216, 218  
 Quick, R. H., 360  
 Quintilian, 86 n.  
 Radcliffe Observatory, 31  
 Raikes, Robert, 10, 57  
 Rate-aid for education, 125, 136, 201,  
     204, 209, 237, 240, 241, 256  
 Raymont, T., 203  
 Reading University, 213, 233, 234, 292  
*Realschule*, 318  
 Rebellions, school, 21  
 Reform Act (1832), 80; (1867), 134, 138,  
     172  
 Register, Teachers', 153, 223-5, 242  
 Registration of boys and girls, 337  
 Religious difficulty, 32, 66, 74, 95, 117,  
     196, 250-1  
 Religious education and instruction, 43,  
     45, 115, 349-50, 354-5; (elemen-  
     tary schools), 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 117,  
     136, 196, 246, 280; (secondary  
     schools), 90-1, 95  
 Religious tests, 30, 31, 36, 80, 143, 228  
 Remand homes, 333  
 Rendcomb school, 286  
 Reorganisation, Hadow, 278-9  
*Republic*, 139, 174, 360  
 Research, 112, 142, (educational), 352,  
     362-4  
 Reserved teachers, 280, 349  
 Residential universities, 139-40  
 Revised Code, 130-2, 170, 173, 200,  
     216-17  
 Revolution, French, 5, 21, 51-2, 55,  
     104  
 Ricardo, David, xvi1  
 Right of entry, 115  
*Rights of Man*, 5, 54-5  
*Robinson Crusoe*, 42  
 Rochdale pioneers, 175  
 Roebuck, J. A., 80-2  
 Roedean, 283  
 Rolland d'Erceville, 51  
 Roman Catholic schools, 7, 57, 123 n.,  
     289-90  
 Rossall School, 93  
 Rossetti, D. G., 176  
 Rouse, W. H. D., 90, 259  
 Rousseau, J.-J., 40-4, 48, 49, 62, 163  
 Royal College of Art, 323  
 Royal College of Chemistry, 157  
 Royal College of Science, 158, 165, 231,  
     322  
 Royal Holloway College, 231

Royal Institution, 110-11, 157  
 Royal School of Mines, 158, 322  
 Royal Society, 165  
 Royal Society of Teachers, 225  
 Rugby L.E.A., 273  
 Rugby School, 15, 17, 21, 22, 89-91,  
     110, 147  
 Ruskin College, 324-5  
 Ruskin, John, 173-5, 176, 183 *n.*, 358-9  
 Russell, Bertrand, 361  
 Russell, Lord John, 125, 142  
 Rutherford, Mark, 171

Sadler, Sir Michael, 94, 166, 252  
 Salary scales, teachers', 301-2, 319  
 Sanderson, F. W., 259  
*Sandford and Merton*, 48  
 Schonell, F. J., 364  
 Scholarships (school), 155, 241, 256-7,  
     314, 315-16, 364; (university), 143,  
     145, 316  
 Scholastic Registration Association,  
     224  
 School base, 308-9  
*School Board Chronicle*, 3  
 School boards, 135-8, 196-9, 235-8,  
     244-7  
 School certificate examination, 305,  
     313-15  
 School-leaving age, 272-3, 279, 344,  
     350  
 School-leaving examination, 315  
 School prayers, 349, 355  
 School, types of:  
     Aided, 348  
     Approved, 290, 333  
     Associated, 285  
     Board, 136-8, 196-200, 204-5, 246  
     Boarding, 283-6  
     Central, 276  
     Charity, 5-8, 32  
     Circulating, 12-13  
     Co-educational, 193-4  
     Common Day, 4-5  
     Controlled, 349  
     County (before 1902), 150; (since  
         1902), 255, 349  
     Dame, 2-3  
     Day Continuation, 273, 322  
     Direct Grant, 383, 349, 353  
     Elementary, 2-13, 33, 114-15, 196-  
         201, 235-8, 253, 347, 352  
     Endowed, 14-23, 84, 150  
     Girls', 25-7, 188-93  
     Grammar, 14-23, 84, 242, 255, 275-6,  
         304-5, 354  
     Higher Grade, 205, 255

School, types of—*contd.*

Independent, 226, 280-91, 351, 353,  
     354, 356, 370  
 Infant, 70-3, 203  
 Junior Commercial, 319  
 Junior Technical, 276-7, 304, 306,  
     318-19  
 Modern, 276, 304  
 Monitorial, 62-8, 122  
 Multilateral, 307-8  
 Nonconformist, 7  
 Non-provided, 246, 280  
 Organised Science, 318  
 Parochial, 5-8, 65, 76, 78  
 People's High (Denmark), 325-6  
 Preparatory, 281-2, 370  
 Primary, 275, 347, 350  
 Private, 23-7, 182-3, 193, 351, 370  
 'Progressive', 24-5, 194 *n.*, 290  
 Proprietary, 149-50  
 Provided, 246, 247, 252, 349  
 Public, 14-23, 84-95, 147-9, 281-8,  
     370  
     Roman Catholic, 7, 288-9  
 Secondary, 14-27, 84-95, 178-81,  
     218, 236-8, 239-44, 247, 255,  
     276-9, 304-15, 344  
 Special, 262, 267  
 Special agreement, 279, 348-9  
 Sunday, 10-13, 32, 56, 57, 66  
 Technical High, 306  
 Trade, 318, 319  
 Voluntary, 137, 196, 237, 246, 251-2,  
     280, 348-50  
 Woodard, 150

Schools:

Ampleforth College, 289  
 Beaumont College, 289  
 Bedales, 194  
 Bradford Grammar, 191  
 Canford, 283  
 Charterhouse, 147, 284  
 Cheltenham College, 93, 149  
 Cheltenham Ladies' College, 188-9  
 Christ's Hospital, 40, 191, 287  
 'Churnside', 286  
 Clergy Daughters', 182, 188  
 Dartington Hall, 290  
 'Dotheboys Hall', 23  
 Douai, 289  
 Downside, 289  
 Dulwich College, 191  
 Eton College, 14, 20, 21-2, 63, 91,  
     147, 178  
 Frensham Heights, 194, 290  
 Harrow, 15, 147, 283  
 Hazelwood, 24-5  
 Hurstpierpoint College, 150

Schools—*contd.*

King Alfred's, 290  
 King's College School, 101-2, 149  
 King's, Canterbury, 15  
 Lady Barn, 193  
 Lady Manners, 14  
 Lancing College, 150  
 Lankhills, 262  
 Leeds Grammar, 19  
 'Lowood,' 182 *n.*  
 Manchester Grammar, 95  
 Marlborough College, 93  
 Merchant Taylors', 17, 147  
 North London Collegiate, 188, 193, 221  
 Rendcomb, 286  
 Repton, 150  
 Roedean, 283  
 Rossall, 93  
 Rugby, 15, 17, 21, 22, 89-91, 110, 147  
 Shrewsbury, 15, 21, 85-8, 147  
 St. George's, Harpenden, 194  
 St. Olave's, 191  
 St. Paul's, 95, 147, 281  
 Stonyhurst College, 289  
 Stowe, 283  
 Tonbridge, 150  
 University College School, 101 *n.*, 149  
 Upholland, 193  
 Uppingham, 150, 178-80  
 Wellington College, 93  
 West Buckland, 150  
 Westminster, 15, 147  
 Whitgift, 19  
 Winchester College, 14, 21, 62, 147  
 Wycliffe Abbey, 283  
 Schools Inquiry Commission, 149-55, 170, 180, 189-91, 209, 224, 225, 243  
 Science, 18, 34, 105, 109-12, 157-67, 177, 228, 306  
 Science and Art Department, 158, 165, 207, 210, 235, 237, 239  
 Sea Cadets, 338  
 Secker, Thomas, 33  
 Secondary schools, 14-27, 84-95, 178-81, 218, 236-8, 239-44, 247, 255, 276-9, 304-15, 344  
 Secondary Schools Examination Council, 313-14  
 Secularists, 51, 133, 350  
 Selborne, Lord, 231  
 Selection for secondary education, 277-8, 310-12, 344-5, 353, 364  
 Self-government in schools, 24-25  
 Selwyn College, 229  
 Senior classes, 276

Settlements, 214  
 Seventh Standard, 200, 235  
 Sheffield University, 232, 292  
 Shenstone, William, 2-3  
 Sherriff, Lawrence, 15  
 Shrewsbury School, 15, 21, 85-88, 147  
 Sidgwick, Henry, 178, 186, 223  
 Sixth Forms, 91, 308, 313, 315  
*Sketches by Box*, 6  
 Slough Community Centre, 327  
 Smith, Adam, xvii, 53  
 Smith, Sydney, 20, 22, 27  
 Smith, W. O. Lester, 343  
 Society for Bettering the Condition of the Poor, 9  
 Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 5, 8, 12  
 Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge, 79  
 Society for the Establishment of Sunday Schools, 10  
 Somerville College, 187  
 'Sophie,' 43-4  
 Soulbury, Lord, 302 *n.*  
 South Kensington, 158, 208, 210, 212, 322-3  
 Southampton University College, 233, 292  
 Southey, R., 11 *n.*  
 Spearman, C., 362  
 Special agreement schools, 279  
 Special Inquiries and Reports, Office of, 244, 252  
 Special places, 257, 344  
 Special schools, 262, 267  
 Special services, 261-70  
 Speenhamland, xiv, 56  
 Spencer, Herbert, 133, 159-65, 169, 358  
 Spens Report, 304-8, 310-11, 369  
 Sports (school), 21, 71-2; (university), 145  
 St. Andrew's University, 169, 222  
 St. George's School, Harpenden, 194  
 St. Hild's College, 297  
 St. Hilda's College, 187, 189  
 St. Hugh's College, 187  
 St. Mark's Training College, 119  
 St. Olave's School, 191  
 St. Paul's School, 95, 147, 281  
 Stanford revision, 363  
 Stanley, A. P., 93  
 Stans, 46  
*State Intervention in Education*, 114  
 State scholarships, 293, 314, 315-16  
 State, the, and education, 50-5, 75-6  
 81-2, 92-3, 123, 124-38, 156, 166  
 169, 172, 173-4, 358-9, 368  
 'Steam intellect society,' 106

- Stephenson, George, 107  
 'Stinkomalee,' 100  
 Stonyhurst College, 289  
 Stow, David, 73, 83, 116, 215  
 Stowe School, 283  
 Strachey, Lytton, 93  
 Stuart, James, 212, 324  
*Suggestions for Teachers*, 254, 259  
 Sunday schools, 10-13, 32, 56, 57, 66  
 Superannuation, teachers', 302-3  
 Swimming, 266, 272
- Tacitus, 353 n.
- Taunton Commission, 149-54, 170-1, 180, 209, 224, 225, 243
- Tawney, R. H., 274
- Teachers' Registration Council, 225, 282
- Teachers' salaries and superannuation, 153, 274, 301-3
- Teachers, training and qualification of, 293, 295-301, 356; (elementary schools), 67, 114, 116, 118-19, 122, 215-27, 243; (nursery schools), 270; (secondary schools), 153, 158, 179-80, 190, 230; (technical schools), 319-20
- Technical education, 104-10, 157-8, 161, 207-12, 233-4, 237, 247, 276-7, 306, 318-23
- Technical high schools, 306
- Technical Instruction Act, 209
- Technique of teaching, 258-9, 359-60
- Terman, L., 363
- Test Act, repeal of, 80
- Tests, mental, 362-4
- Tests, religious, 30, 31, 36, 80, 143, 228
- Thackeray, W. M., 23
- Theological colleges, 229, 231
- Theology, 139
- Theory, educational, 38-48, 168-77, 358-72
- Thompson, D'Arcy, 40
- Thompson, Godfrey, 361
- Thorndike, E. C., 362
- Thring, Edward, 91, 178-81, 226, 259, 265
- Times, The*, 99, 253, 344, 345 n.
- Tom Brown's Schooldays*, 17, 22, 91, 93, 175
- Toynbee, Arnold, 213-14
- Tractarianism, 98, 139, 141
- Trade schools, 318, 319
- Training colleges, 67, 114, 116, 118-19, 122, 216, 218-20, 296
- Transfer of training, 17-18
- Trent, Lord, 294
- Trevelyan, G. M., 57, 84-5, 138
- Trimmer, Sarah, 7, 11, 66
- Triposes, 30-1, 97, 112, 186, 228, 294
- 'Truscott, Bruce,' 142
- Tufnell, E. C., 118
- Tutorial system, 141
- Types, intellectual, 309-12, 353
- Unemployment, juvenile, 331-2
- Uniformity, Act of, 32, 33
- Unitarianism, 36
- 'Universal education,' 51
- Universities:
- Birmingham, 232
  - Bristol, 232, 292
  - Cambridge, 28, 30-1, 36, 97, 142-3, 185, 213, 220, 222, 228-9, 292-4
  - Dublin, 187
  - Durham, 144, 230, 233, 247
  - Edinburgh, 222
  - Leeds, 232, 292
  - Liverpool, 232, 292
  - London, 37, 80, 93, 99-103, 112, 140, 144, 185, 187, 213, 230-1, 294-5, 323
  - Manchester, 231-2, 252, 292
  - Oxford, 28-31, 96-7, 115, 140-5, 187, 189, 213, 220, 228-9, 292-4
  - Reading, 213, 233, 234, 292
  - Sheffield, 232, 292
  - St. Andrew's, 169, 222
  - Victoria, 187, 232, 292
  - Wales, 187, 233
- University College, London, 99-100, 102, 103, 185
- University College School (London University School), 101 n., 149
- University Colleges:
- Aberystwyth, 233
  - Exeter, 213, 233, 292
  - Hull, 233, 292
  - Leicester, 233, 292
  - Nottingham, 233, 292
  - Southampton, 233, 292
- University day training colleges, 206, 219-20, 223, 258, 361
- University expenses, 98, 100, 144, 230
- University Extension, 186, 212-13, 324
- University Grants Committee, 292-3
- University Schools of Education, 299-300
- Unwin, G., 12 n.
- Upholland Grammar School, 193
- Uppingham School, 150, 178-80
- Utilitarianism, 84, 107, 165, 358
- Valentine, C. W., 361
- Van Mildert, Bishop, 144
- Vanity Fair*, 23, 25

- Victoria University, 187, 232, 292  
 Village Colleges (Cambridgeshire), 117, 328  
 Vocational education, 99, 318-22  
 Vocational guidance, 329-30, 364  
 Voltaire, 49  
 Voluntary Care Committees, 263  
 Voluntary schools, 137, 196, 237, 246, 251-2, 280, 348-50  
 Voluntarists, 121, 133  
 Volunteer movement, 176, 337  
  
 Wales, education in, 12-13, 187, 233, 247 n., 250  
 Wales, University of, 187, 233  
 War and education, 127, 271, 302, 340-2, 355 6  
 Ward, Mrs. Humphry, 266  
 Warrington Academy, 33-4, 35  
*Water Babies*, 3  
*Wealth of Nations*, 53  
 Wehrli, J. J., 116, 118  
 Wellington College, 93  
 Welsh Intermediate Schools, 247 n.  
 Wesley, John, 56-8  
 Westminster School, 15, 147  
 Wheat, price of, xiv  
 Whewell, William, 111-12  
 'Whisky money,' 210  
 Whitbread, Samuel, 65, 67, 76-7  
 Whitehead, A. N., 361  
 Whitehouse, J. H., 308  
 Whitelands Training College, 119  
 Whitgift School, 19  
  
 Wilberforce, William, 58, 67  
 Wilderspin, Samuel, 71-2, 73  
 William of Wykeham, 14, 17  
 Wills, W. H., 294  
 Wilson, J. M., 110  
 Winchester College, 14, 21, 62, 147  
 Wollstonecraft, Mary, 27, 55  
 Women, education of, 27, 182-7  
 Women's institutes, 326  
 Woodaid, Nathaniel, 150  
 Woodbrooke, 325  
 Wooll, Dr., 89  
 Wordsworth, William, 52  
 Workers' Educational Association, 176, 324  
 Workhouse children, 9, 75  
 Working Men's College, 173, 175-6, 184, 212  
 Wycombe Abbey School, 283  
 Wye Agricultural College, 281  
  
 Yorkshire College, Leeds, 232  
 Young, Arthur, xiv  
 Young Men's Christian Association, 335  
 'Young persons,' 273, 298 n., 351  
 Youth leaders, 299, 339  
 Youth Service, 344-9  
 'Youth squads,' 337  
 Yverdon, 44-5, 70  
  
 Zimmern, Alice, 191  
 Zürich Polytechnikum, 209



